

Serbian

An Essential Grammar

Lila Hammond

● ● ● ● ● ○ ESSENTIAL GRAMMARS

**Also available as a printed book
see title verso for ISBN details**

Serbian

An Essential Grammar

Serbian: An Essential Grammar is an up to date and practical reference guide to the most important aspects of Serbian as used by contemporary native speakers of the language.

This book presents an accessible description of the language, focusing on real, contemporary patterns of use. The *Grammar* aims to serve as a reference source for the learner and user of Serbian irrespective of level, by setting out the complexities of the language in short, readable sections.

It is ideal for independent study or for students in schools, colleges, universities and all types of adult classes.

Features of this *Grammar* include:

- use of Cyrillic and Latin script in plentiful examples throughout
- a cultural section on the language and its dialects
- clear and detailed explanations of simple and complex grammatical concepts
- detailed contents list and index for easy access to information.

Lila Hammond has been teaching Serbian both in Serbia and the UK for over twenty-five years and presently teaches at the Defence School of Languages, Beaconsfield, UK.

Routledge Essential Grammars

Essential Grammars are available for the following languages:

Chinese
Danish
Dutch
English
Finnish
Modern Greek
Modern Hebrew
Hungarian
Norwegian
Polish
Portuguese
Serbian
Spanish
Swedish
Thai
Urdu

Other titles of related interest published by Routledge:

Colloquial Croatian
Colloquial Serbian

Serbian

An Essential Grammar



Lila Hammond

First published 2005
by Routledge
2 Park Square, Milton Park, Abingdon, Oxon OX14 4RN

Simultaneously published in the USA and Canada
by Routledge
270 Madison Ave, New York, NY 10016

Routledge is an imprint of the Taylor & Francis Group

This edition published in the Taylor & Francis e-Library, 2005.

“To purchase your own copy of this or any of Taylor & Francis or Routledge’s collection of thousands of eBooks please go to www.eBookstore.tandf.co.uk.”

© 2005 Lila Hammond

Typeset in 10/12pt Sabon
by Graphicraft Ltd, Hong Kong
Printed and bound in Great Britain
by MPG Books Ltd, Bodmin

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reprinted or reproduced or utilized in any form or by any electronic, mechanical, or other means, now known or hereafter invented, including photocopying and recording, or in any information storage or retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publishers.

British Library Cataloguing in Publication Data

A catalogue record for this book is available from the British Library

Library of Congress Cataloging in Publication Data

Hammond, Lila,

Serbian : an essential grammar / Lila Hammond.

p. cm. — (Routledge essential grammars)

Includes bibliographical references and index.

ISBN 0-415-28641-7 (pbk. : acid free) — ISBN 0-415-28640-9 (hardback : acid free)

I. Serbian language—Textbooks for foreign speakers—English. 2. Serbian language—

Grammar. I. Title. II. Series: Essential grammar.

PG1239.5.E5H25 2005

491.8’282421—dc22

2004010094

ISBN 0-415-28640-9 (hbk)

ISBN 0-415-28641-7 (pbk)

I dedicate this book to
Militca, Leo and Tara

Contents

Preface	xiii
Acknowledgements	xiv
Part I The language and its dialects	I
<hr/>	
Chapter 1 Cultural, literary and linguistic background	3
Chapter 2 Dialects	9
Part II Alphabet, pronunciation and stress	II
<hr/>	
Chapter 3 Alphabet	13
Chapter 4 Pronunciation	17
4.1 Consonants	19
4.1.1 Voiced and unvoiced consonants	19
4.1.2 Soft and hard consonants	20
4.1.3 Consonantal assimilations	21
4.1.4 Consonantal contractions	22
4.1.5 Fleeting a	23
4.1.6 Change of π/l to ο	24
4.1.7 J changes	25
4.1.8 Effects of ε/ε and ι/i on κ/k , γ/g and χ/h	27
4.2 Vowels	29
4.2.1 Length and stress	29
4.2.2 Vowel mutations	29
Chapter 5 Stress	31
5.1 Word stress and tone	31
5.2 Shift of stress	32
5.3 Sentence stress	32

Part III	Parts of speech	33
Chapter 6	Verbs	35
6.1	Infinitives – classification	37
6.2	Infinitive and present tense stems	39
6.2.1	Type I conjugation	41
6.2.2	Type II conjugation	42
6.2.3	Type III conjugation	48
6.3	Types of verbs and aspects	50
6.3.1	Transitive and intransitive verbs	50
6.3.2	Imperfective and perfective verbs	51
6.4	Present tense	58
6.4.1	Formation of the present tense and its use	58
6.4.2	The negative present tense	63
6.4.3	The interrogative present	63
6.4.4	The negative interrogative present tense	64
6.5	Past tense (perfect tense)	64
6.5.1	Formation of the perfect tense and its use	64
6.5.2	The negative perfect tense	69
6.5.3	The interrogative perfect tense	70
6.5.4	The negative interrogative perfect tense	70
6.6	Future tense	71
6.6.1	Formation of the future tense and its use	71
6.6.2	The negative future	73
6.6.3	The interrogative future	74
6.6.4	The negative interrogative future	75
6.7	Aorist tense	75
6.7.1	Formation of the aorist tense and its use	76
6.7.2	The negative aorist	80
6.7.3	The interrogative aorist	80
6.7.4	The negative interrogative aorist	81
6.8	Future II	81
6.8.1	Uses of future II	81
6.8.2	Formation of the future II	82
6.9	The conditional	82
6.9.1	Uses of the conditional	82
6.9.2	Formation of the conditional	83
6.10	Imperative	87
6.10.1	Use of the imperative	87
6.10.2	Formation of the imperative	88
6.11	Reflexive verbs	90
6.12	Impersonal verbs	91

6.13	Auxiliary verbs	92
6.14	Formation of the interrogative	93
6.15	Formation of the negative	95
6.16	Present perfective aspect of бити / <i>biti</i>	99
6.17	Ићи / <i>ići</i> and its derivatives	99
6.18	Modal verbs	101
Chapter 7	Nouns	105
7.1	Types of nouns	105
7.2	Gender of nouns	111
7.3	Cases of nouns	112
7.3.1	Nominative case	115
7.3.2	Genitive case	117
7.3.3	Dative case	126
7.3.4	Accusative case	133
7.3.5	Vocative case	140
7.3.6	Instrumental case	142
7.3.7	Locative case	146
7.4	Declension of nouns	152
7.4.1	Masculine and neuter nouns	153
7.4.2	Feminine and masculine nouns ending in -a and the noun мати / <i>mati</i>	162
7.4.3	Feminine nouns ending in a consonant, in -o, -ост/ <i>ost</i> or -ад/ <i>ad</i> , and the noun кћи / <i>kći</i>	168
7.4.4	Declension of irregular nouns	173
Chapter 8	Pronouns	178
8.1	Personal pronouns	180
8.1.1	Declension of personal pronouns	181
8.1.2	Stressed personal pronouns	183
8.1.3	Unstressed personal pronouns	184
8.1.4	Order of unstressed personal pronouns	185
8.2	Reflexive pronouns	186
8.3	Possessive pronouns	188
8.4	Demonstrative pronouns	192
8.5	Relative pronouns	195
8.6	Interrogative pronouns	197
8.7	Universal pronouns	199
Chapter 9	Adjectives	201
9.1	Classification of adjectives	203
9.2	Indefinite adjectives	205
9.3	Definite adjectives	207

9.4	Possessive adjectives	210
9.5	Adjectival declension	212
9.6	Comparative adjectives	214
9.7	Superlative adjectives	216
9.8	Verbal adjectives	217
9.8.1	The active past participle	217
9.8.2	Formation of the active past participle	218
9.8.3	The passive participle	220
9.8.4	Formation of the passive past participle	220
Chapter 10 Adverbs		223
10.1	Substantival (nominal) adverbs	224
10.2	Adjectival adverbs	226
10.3	Pronominal adverbs	226
10.4	Verbal adverbs	229
10.4.1	The present verbal adverb	229
10.4.2	The past verbal adverb	231
Chapter 11 Prepositions		233
11.1	Simple prepositions	234
11.2	Compound prepositions	235
11.3	Accentuation	235
11.4	Prepositions through the cases	236
Chapter 12 Conjunctions		240
12.1	Coordinating conjunctions	240
12.2	Subordinating conjunctions	243
12.3	Differences in usages of што/što and који/koji	246
Chapter 13 Enclitics		249
13.1	Order and importance of enclitics	250
Chapter 14 Numerals		255
14.1	Cardinal numbers and their declension	255
14.1.1	Number one	258
14.1.2	Numerals two, three, four and the numeral 'both'	260
14.1.3	Numerals five, six, seven and onwards	263
14.2	Ordinal numbers and their declension	265
14.3	Fractions and decimal numbers	267
14.4	Collective numerals	268
14.5	Number nouns	269
14.6	Multiplicatives	270
14.7	Approximatives	270

14.8	Distributives	271
14.9	Frequentatives	271
14.10	Weights and measures	272
14.11	Age	273
14.12	Days, months and dates	274
14.13	Time	278
	14.13.1 Telling the time	278
	14.13.2 Time-related words and expressions	280
Chapter 15	Quantifiers	282
15.1	Types of quantifiers	282
	15.1.1 Countable quantifiers	282
	15.1.2 Uncountable quantifiers	284
	15.1.3 Countable and uncountable quantifiers	285
Chapter 16	Determiners	288
16.1	Possessive determiners	288
16.2	Demonstrative determiners	289
16.3	Indefinite determiners	290
16.4	Interrogative determiners	291
16.5	Negative determiners	291
Chapter 17	Particles, conjunctions and exclamations	293
Part IV	Sentence elements and structure	297
Chapter 18	Sentences	299
18.1	Elements of a sentence	299
18.2	Types of clauses	301
Chapter 19	Sentence structure	303
19.1	Word order	303
19.2	Punctuation	303
19.3	Simple sentences	306
19.4	Complex sentences	306
Chapter 20	Word formation	307
20.1	Prefixes	308
20.2	Suffixes	310
	20.2.1 Nouns	310
	20.2.2 Adjectives	314
Bibliography		316
Index		317

Preface

The purpose of this book is to offer the English-speaking student of Serbian a thorough and accessible overview of Serbian grammar.

Serbian is a complex and expressive language and the scope of this book is too narrow to allow for sufficient examples to facilitate a more profound comprehension and understanding of the language. It does however, strive to explain, as much as possible, the rules governing most linguistic and grammatical conditions and structures.

Serbian is not a language of simple constructions and straightforward expressions, and perhaps the most important piece of advice to the student would be to approach his or her study of this language with a curious and courageous mind.

It is a beautiful language and I compliment the student wishing to learn it.

Lila Hammond
London, 2005

Acknowledgements

I wish to express my gratitude to all the people who made writing this book possible. Amongst them are Verica Stevanović, Gordana Ilić, Miroslava Virijević, as well as Farret Abbas, Wayne Doran and Zlata Krivokuća, who were always at hand with their support and encouragement.

I also wish to thank my students, for their patience and perseverance in studying this language and in continually challenging me to improve my methods of explaining and defining it. I thank them especially for their determination in pursuing their studies during those difficult times, of which there were, and inevitably are, many. Seeing them develop into users and speakers of Serbian has been a great inspiration and reward for me as a teacher.

And finally, I wish to thank my editors, Sophie Oliver and James Folan for their patience, understanding, support and trust during the writing of this book.

Part I

*The language and
its dialects*

Cultural, literary and linguistic background

Serbian belongs to the Slavonic group of languages, which, along with the Romance and Germanic languages, is one of the three largest groups of the Indo-European family of languages.

The Slavonic group of languages includes Polish, Czech and Slovak (belonging to the western group of Slavonic languages), Ukrainian, Belarus and Russian (belonging to the eastern group of Slavonic languages) and Slovenian, Serbian, Croatian, Bosnian, Bulgarian and Macedonian (belonging to the southern group of Slavonic languages).

In the sixth and seventh centuries, various Slavonic tribes, some of which were to become the Serbian nation, migrated from the north – Russia, Byelorussia and the Ukraine, where they shared the land with the eastern Slavs – and travelled to the Balkan peninsula and the region of Pannonia. At the time Bulgaria and the Byzantine Empire both wanted to occupy this region. The Slavs, themselves pagans, were also caught between the Western, Catholic, and the Eastern, Orthodox religions. In the ninth century, Serbian rulers, struggling for power, converted to Christianity and were baptised by priests from the Byzantine Empire. Different tribes joined together under the common Christian religion.

In the twelfth century, the founder of the most significant medieval Serbian dynasty, Stefan Nemanja, expanded his lands to include Kosovo and, further, to what is now the Montenegrin coast. Appointing his middle son, Stefan Nemanjić, a son-in-law of the Byzantine imperial family, to replace him, Nemanja joined his youngest son, Sava, a monk in the Orthodox faith, to become a monk himself. Stefan Nemanjić managed, through clever running of the state, to fend off Serbia's enemies. He managed to maintain good relations with both the West and the East and in the thirteenth century he received a royal crown from the Pope, which gave him the title of Stevan Prvovenčani, the 'first-crowned king' of Serbia.

His father, Stefan Nemanja, and brother, Sava, built the monastery of Hilandar on Mount Athos in Greece, which became the most prestigious

school for Serbian monks. This monastery is of great importance in the development of the Serbian church and Serbian culture.

With the appointment of Sava (who was proclaimed a saint upon his death) as archbishop in Nicaea, the centre for Greeks in Asia Minor, the links between the Serbian nation and the Orthodox tradition were further strengthened. On Sava's instruction the Byzantine code of church laws and rules for use by the clergy, as well as many medical and scientific writings, were translated. He founded the first Serbian hospitals (in Hilandar and Studenica) and was the founder of Serbian literature, having written, with his brother Stefan Nemanjić, the first original Serbian literary work, the *Vitae of St Simeon* (The Life of Stefan Nemanja, their father and founder of the dynasty). (St Sava's remains were burnt by the Turks four centuries later in Belgrade, where the temple of St Sava now stands.)

Although Sava's brother, Stefan Nemanjić, had been crowned by the Pope, he was under the influence of his brother and father and wanted to unify the Serbian state under the Orthodox religion. The Nemanja dynasty gradually succeeded in uniting all the Serbian lands and gave to their country a strong and united church, the Serbian Orthodox Church. Culturally very active, the kingdom and church had their own Slavonic liturgy and language (based on Old Slavonic). The translation of important Byzantine scrolls, liturgies, church laws, literary and architectural works was pursued and highly respected.

The Nemanja dynasty continued to rule the state, and under the rule of Stefan Dušan (1331–1355), its boundaries expanded southward to include not only Macedonia and Albania, but regions of the Byzantine Empire too. It covered the area from the Sava and Danube rivers down to the Gulf of Corinth, and became the leading power of the Balkan peninsula. And as Dušan elevated the Serbian archbishopric to the level of a Patriarchate, he was crowned the 'Emperor of the Serbs and Greeks'.

Dušan ruled the state and set up all the major state systems and judiciary based on the Byzantine model. And since some of his territories were under the rule of custom and had never been under Byzantine law, he adopted an entire code of laws, under the name of *Dušan's Code*, in an attempt to unify the territories and bridge the gap between the impoverished and the wealthy.

And, as had the rulers before him, Dušan also emulated Byzantine architecture and art, and the many monasteries and churches built in the Serbian state at the time are examples of a distinct Serbian Byzantine style in both these fields.

The Serbs were eventually conquered by the Turks in the fifteenth century. An event in history that is taken to mark the fall of the great Serbian Empire was the battle at Kosovo Polje in 1389. The lands were divided between the Turkish warlords, who recognised each religious

group as an administratively separate community, even though, in many ways, the Serbian nation was placed under pressure to abide by Muslim social order. From the middle of the fifteenth century to the beginning of the nineteenth century, during the Ottoman rule, great migrations of Serbs took place. Throughout this time, the Serbian Orthodox Church did much to give the Serbs a sense of unity and continuity. In two of the most important migrations that took place during this period the people were led by their patriarchs. When the Turkish government dissolved the Patriarchate of Peć in 1766, church authority was re-established with the Greek archbishops, thus gaining an international position. In 1832, the Serbian Church became autonomous. It did not unify into a Serbian Patriarchate until 1920 when the Serbs were united into one state.

After the elimination of the Patriarchate of Peć, the Turkish pashalic of Belgrade became the centre of Serbian culture and tradition. In 1804 the Serbs there rebelled against the janissaries and Turkish landowners. Led by Đorđe Petrović, known as Karađorđe, the rebels liberated the whole pashalic.

However, the war with the Turks continued, and in 1815 the new Serbian leader, Miloš Obrenović, signed a peace treaty with the Turks that brought an end to the struggle against the Turks in that area. The Serbs organised a state with a legal structure and a strong army, and, though still a client state of the Ottoman Empire, it had its autonomy.

The state expanded to include territories already liberated by Karađorđe.

While the Serbian people were fighting for an independent state from 1835 to 1878, their rulers were aware that they needed a massive action plan in order to recover their people and culture from the backwardness caused by centuries of slavery under the Turks. By the end of the 1830s the principality had its own constitution, followed by a *Civil Code* as Prince Miloš laid down the foundations of democracy by distributing land to the peasants. State management, culture and education were institutionalised, and in 1882, elementary education became obligatory. The Serbian Association of Scholars was founded as well as the National Museum and the Academy of Arts and Sciences. The Great School, founded in 1863, became a university in 1905. The economy and trade developed and the beginnings of industrialisation and banking also appeared. Talented people were sent to universities throughout Europe, returning as knowledgeable and well-educated Europeans. This striving for scientific and scholarly advancement continued later in the Republic of Yugoslavia. Among the scholars of these times was Nikola Tesla (the late nineteenth–early twentieth-century inventor in the field of electricity, a Serb originally from Croatia who later moved to the United States), and other experts in their field.

In 1918 the Kingdom of the Serbs, Croats and Slovenes was created. From 1929 it was called Yugoslavia.

Yugoslavia emerged from the Second World War with a completely new social structure. Led by the president of the state, Josip Broz Tito, it was initially a 'people's republic' and then a 'socialist republic', consisting of six republics (Slovenia, Croatia, Bosnia-Herzegovina, Serbia, Montenegro and Macedonia) and two autonomous provinces, Vojvodina and Kosovo. In the Yugoslavia prior to the war, the Serb, Croat and Slovene people were free to express and share their culture and faith. Postwar Yugoslavia saw a suppression of freedom in culture, also open expression of religious practice was not looked upon favourably.

Following Tito's death in 1980 and under pressure from the autonomous provinces (particularly Kosovo, which sought to be granted the status of a republic) Yugoslavia began to disintegrate into its constituent republics. A bloody civil war broke out in 1991, and the country was divided into separate states, with many Serbs living outside Serbia and Montenegro, the two states which remained together.

The language of the Slavs who migrated to the Balkans in the sixth and seventh centuries also underwent changes. As the Slavonic tribes migrated, the language of the southern Slavs changed from that spoken by the eastern Slavs. Though the languages remained essentially similar, the differences became distinctive when the south Slavs reached the Balkans and the Pannonia region, at which time some tribes travelled southeast, while others moved southwest. The differences in the interrogative pronoun 'What?' is a handy label for laying down the basic differences in what were to become the different languages and dialects spoken in the region today. Those who travelled southwest used **kaj/kaj** or **ча/ча** to say 'What?' Those Slavs travelling southeast used the interrogative **што-шта/što-šta**.

When in the ninth century the Moravian ruler asked the Byzantine Emperor to send missionaries to convert the Slavs of the region to the Christian faith, the latter responded by sending the brothers Constantine (later called Cyril when he became a monk) and Methodius. They were asked to translate, on the basis of their knowledge of the Slavonic language spoken by a Macedonian tribe in the Salonika area, the most important Byzantine religious books. The language had no written form and the brothers had to invent one. The language which they created and translated into, Old Church Slavonic, was the first of the Slavonic languages to be used in literary and liturgical spheres.

In order to translate the works, the brothers used the Greek alphabet as the basis on which they invented letters to represent the sounds of the Slavonic language. Glagolitic, the alphabet invented by Cyril, had forty letters, a letter for each of the sounds. This alphabet was soon replaced by the Cyrillic alphabet, consisting of the Greek alphabet of

the period with fourteen letters added. In cultural terms, the invention of the alphabet was of great significance.

Slavic monasteries on Athos were among the main centres of translation. Translation constantly developed and enriched the literary Serbian Church Slavonic as many Slavic authors developed and practised the art of creating new words to express the abstract concepts they were translating into literary works.

Church Slavonic, with its local variants, facilitated further dissemination of the Orthodox faith. The works translated from Greek were quickly shared by all the countries of the Orthodox Slavic world and the languages of these countries, particularly Russian Church Slavonic, had a strong influence on Serbian Church Slavonic at the end of the eighteenth century.

During the rule of Karađorđe, many educated Serbs from Austria moved into Serbia. Among them was Dositej Obradović, a great scholar who spoke Latin, Greek, German, French, Italian and Russian. As soon as he heard of the liberation from the Turks, he returned to Serbia and met with Karađorđe. He believed that people had to be educated and enlightened. As Church Slavonic, which was interspersed with Russian, was too far removed from the living language of the people (most of whom were not able to understand the texts) Dositej wanted to bridge the gap between this church language and the people's language. Having been exposed to the European Enlightenment, he insisted that the written language be understood by everybody, including the uneducated. Soon the Russian literary language was no longer used by Serbian authors and Church Slavonic was used only in theological and liturgical books. Dositej became the minister of culture and fought to have schools built and for both men and women to attend.

The great Serbian philologist Vuk Karadžić (1787–1864) played a crucial role in the development of the alphabet. He travelled around the country, collecting folk stories and sayings, and incorporated this spoken language into the written literary form. He attempted to create a completely phonetic alphabet, where one sound of the spoken language was represented by one symbol in the written form. With this in mind, he discarded some symbols he felt did not correspond to a particular sound, and introduced six new ones, in accordance with the principle, 'a letter for every sound':

ђ њ њ њ њ њ

đ lj nj ć dž j

In 1818 he wrote the Serbian dictionary in the language spoken by the people. However, Karadžić's own language was of the Ijekavian dialect, spoken in western Serbia, Bosnia and Herzegovina,

and Montenegro and among Serbs in Croatia and Dalmatia. The literary language until then was the Ekavian Štokavian dialect, spoken in the northeastern regions, as that was where the most significant cultural, political and economic centres of the Serbs were located. The Serbs from these areas were not prepared to give up their Ekavian for an Ijekavian dialect, and Serbia and Vojvodina retained their dialect. The Croats and Muslims of Bosnia-Herzegovina, on the other hand, accepted his reforms completely, as did the Serbs living in Montenegro.

In spite of these differences, Karadžić's reforms paved the way for a spontaneous development of the literary language through its relationship with the spoken word. The language expanded as new words were created from existing roots and nuances of meaning acquired. Words of Latin and Greek origin were adopted as the Serbian language became increasingly cosmopolitan. During the twentieth century, many French and English words were also adopted.

In the meantime, the Croats, who had during the fourteenth century, while under the influence of the western world and Catholicism, adopted the Latin alphabet, had in the nineteenth century, added letters for palatal and palatalised consonants from Czech and Polish. Now this alphabet, too, was phonetic (with the exception of *lj*, *nj* and *dž*, where two letters represent one sound).

By the nineteenth century, realising that their languages had a lot in common, the Croats and Serbs unified their languages under the name of Serbo-Croatian. However, wanting secession from Yugoslavia, during the twentieth century, Croatian linguists began to emphasise the differences between the languages, proclaiming Croatian as a separate language. New words were coined to prove that differences existed. With the break-up of Yugoslavia at the end of the twentieth century came the fragmentation of the unified language, Serbo-Croatian. The Croatian language quickly developed as a separate language in relation to Serbian, with new words speedily introduced to mark its differences. Serbian, on the other hand, remained unchanged.

Dialects

Three distinctive dialects are spoken in the various regions of former Yugoslavia. The dialects refer to the different ways the word ‘what’ is spoken:

- 1 **кајкавски/kajkavski** – the Kajkavian dialect – **кај/кај** (what)
This dialect is mostly spoken in Slavonia and northwestern Croatia and near the Slovenian border where it closely resembles the Slovenian language.
- 2 **чакавски/čakavski** – the Čakavian dialect – **ча/ча** (what)
This dialect is spoken in northern parts of Croatia and Istria, and along the Adriatic coast and its islands.
- 3 **штокавски/štokavski** – the Štokavian dialect – **што/što** or **шта/šta** (what)
This is the most widely spoken dialect in the region. It is spoken by all Serbs, Croats, Bosnians and Montenegrins, except in those regions already mentioned.

The Štokavian dialect has three sub-dialects that developed from three different pronunciations of the Old Slavonic **јат**, the long vowel **ě** (distinct from the ordinary vowel **e**, which still exists as the **e** sound).

The three sub-dialects are:

- 1 **икавски/ikavski** (Ikavian)
Spoken in western Vojvodina, western Bosnia and Herzegovina, western Croatia and northwestern parts of the Adriatic.
- 2 **ијекавски/ijekavski** (Ijekavian)
Spoken in western Serbia, Croatia, Montenegro, the southern Adriatic coast and eastern Bosnia. The Croatian and Bosnian languages are of the Ijekavian dialect, written in the Latin alphabet.
- 3 **екавски/ekavski** (Ekavian)
Spoken in Serbia and Vojvodina, this is the dialect of the Serbian language which generally uses the Cyrillic alphabet.

The vowel *ě* is pronounced as follows in each dialect:

Ikavian – **и/і**

млико **mliko** milk

вриме **vrimе** time

Ijekavian – **је, ије/іје**

млијеко **mlijeko** milk

вријеме **vrijeme** time

Ekavian – **е/е**

млеко **mleko** milk

време **vreme** time

The above differences in pronunciation apply only to words where the original **jat** sound existed and not whenever the vowel **e** appears. The word **пет/пет** (five), for example, is pronounced the same in all three sub-dialects.

Part II

Alphabet, pronunciation and stress

Chapter 3

Alphabet

The Cyrillic alphabet, **ћирилица/ćirilica**, and the Latin alphabet, **латиница/latinica**, are the two alphabets in use in Serbian. They both contain the same thirty letters, though not in the same order.

The Cyrillic alphabet, **ћирилица/ćirilica**, is based on Greek and was adopted by the Serbs during the Byzantine era. The Latin alphabet, **латиница/latinica**, adopted by the Serbs living in the western parts of the country, in what was to become Croatia, in the fourteenth century, is the same as the one used in English, with the addition of five new letters and eight new sounds.

The Cyrillic alphabet:

		Italics		Latin equivalent
А	а	<i>A, a</i>	A	Assam
Б	б	<i>Б, б</i>	B	bench
В	в	<i>В, в</i>	V	victim
Г	г	<i>Г, г</i>	G	good
Д	д	<i>Д, д</i>	D	desk
Ђ	ђ	<i>Ђ, ђ</i>	Đ	due
Е	е	<i>Е, е</i>	E	let
Ж	ж	<i>Ж, ж</i>	Ž	pleasure
З	з	<i>З, э</i>	Z	Zen
И	и	<i>И, и</i>	I	he
Ј	ј	<i>Ј, ј</i>	J	yoyo
К	к	<i>К, к</i>	K	club
Л	л	<i>Л, л</i>	L	liver
Љ	љ	<i>Љ, љ</i>	Lj	million
М	м	<i>М, м</i>	M	man
Н	н	<i>Н, н</i>	N	no
Њ	њ	<i>Њ, њ</i>	Nj	minion
О	о	<i>О, о</i>	O	operate
П	п	<i>П, п</i>	P	pen
Р	р	<i>Р, р</i>	R	Ferrero
С	с	<i>С, с</i>	S	stop
Т	т	<i>Т, т</i>	T	top
Ћ	ћ	<i>Ћ, ћ</i>	Ć	tube
У	у	<i>У, у</i>	U	room
Ф	ф	<i>Ф, ф</i>	F	futon
Х	х	<i>Х, х</i>	H	Henry
Ц	ц	<i>Ц, ц</i>	C	lots
Ч	ч	<i>Ч, ч</i>	Č	chocolate
Џ	џ	<i>Џ, џ</i>	Dž	juke-box
Ш	ш	<i>Ш, ш</i>	Š	shoulder

Note: There are two possible forms of Cyrillic г (the letter g) – one with a crossbar, one without. There are also two possible forms of Cyrillic д (the letter d) – one with a 'tail' going up: ђ, and one with a 'tail' going down: г.



Нашао сам пса.

Нашао сам пса./Našao sam psa.

I found the dog.

It is important that the cursive or hand-written Cyrillic form is learnt properly. The letters are distinctive in form, and each is connected to another in an elaborate manner. Note the crossbar above Г (G), П (P), Т (T). A horizontal bar is often written under Ш (Š) as well.

The Latin alphabet:

		Cyrillic equivalent	
A	a	А	Assam
B	b	Б	bench
C	c	Ц	lots
Č	č	Ч	chocolate
Ć	ć	Ћ	tube
D	d	Д	desk
Dž	dž	Џ	juke-box
Đ	đ	Ђ	due
E	e	Е	let
F	f	Ф	futon
G	g	Г	good
H	h	Х	Henry
I	i	И	He
J	j	Ј	yoyo
K	k	К	club
L	l	Л	liver
Lj	lj	Љ	million
M	m	М	man
N	n	Н	no
Nj	nj	Њ	minion
O	o	О	operate
P	p	П	pen
R	r	Р	Ferrero
S	s	С	stop
Š	š	Ш	shoulder
T	t	Т	top
U	u	У	room
V	v	В	victim
Z	z	З	Zen
Ž	ž	Ж	pleasure

Note: The hand-written forms of the Latin letters, with the addition of **Ž ž, Đ đ, Ć ć, Č č** and **Š š**, are the same as those used in English. The English letters **q, w, x** and **y** do not exist in the Serbian alphabet.

Pronunciation

Every letter is pronounced.

Consonants are pronounced similarly to English, with the following exceptions:

- 1 The four consonants written as in English but with only one pronunciation as compared to several in English, are:

ц/с is never pronounced as in 'carry' but always as in 'Tzar'

г/г is never pronounced as in 'giant', but always as in 'good'

й is never pronounced as in 'jade' but always as in 'yes'

с/с is never pronounced as in 'season' or 'shower', but always as in 'see'

- 2 The eight consonants which do not appear in English are:

ђ đ *due*

ж ж *pleasure*

љ љ *million*

(The two sounds which form this letter are pronounced simultaneously, and not separately.)

њ њ *minion*

(The two sounds which form this letter are pronounced simultaneously, and not separately.)

ћ ć *chase*

ч ч *chocolate*

џ дж *juke-box*

ш ш *champagne*

3 The *dental* sounds, where the tongue is pressed against the back of the teeth, are **т/t**, **д/d**, **з/z**, **с/s**, **ц/c**, **р/r**, **л/l** and **н/n**.

4 The letter **т/t** is dropped before the letter **ц/c** – **отац/отас** (nominative) – **оца/осà** (genitive). Both **т/t** and **д/d** are usually dropped when they occur between two consonants of which the first may be **с/s**, **ш/š**, **з/z**, **ж/ž**, followed by **б/b**, **к/k**, **л/l**, **љ/lj**, **м/m**, **н/n** or **њ/nj**.

болестан (m) – **болесна** (f) **bolestan** (m) – **bolesna** (f) ill

жалостан (m) – **жалосна** (f) **žalostan** (m) – **žalosna** (f) sad

5 The consonant **р/r** can occur:

- on its own: **оркестар/orkestar** (orchestra), **осигурати/osigurati** (to insure), **Оливера/Olivera** (female name, Olivera);
- before or after another consonant: **наградити/nagraditi** (to award), **преглед/pregled** (review, examination);
- between two consonants: **мртав/mrtav** (dead), **пргав/prgav** (short-tempered), etc., where it acts as a vowel.

6 The following are some of the consonant clusters that can stand together at the end of a word in modern Serbian. The first four of these are considered in traditional Serbian to be the only consonant clusters with which a word can end:

-ст	-st	храст/hrast	oak
-шт	-št	плашт/plašt	sheet
-зд	-zd	грозд/grozd	grape
-жд	-žd	вожд/vožd	duke
-рк	-rk	парк/park	park
-нц	-nc	принц/princ	prince
-нт	-nt	матурант/maturant	graduate
-ск	-sk	диск/disk	disc

7 All vowels are pronounced:

а **a** Assam

е **e** set

и **i** she

о **o** occult

у **u** room

4.1 Consonants

Consonants are divided into two basic categories depending on the degree of obstruction or restriction in the airflow during articulation of the consonant within the mouth cavity:

- (a) Obstruent consonants – formed with restricted air flow:
all consonants excluding those under (b)
- (b) Resonant consonants – formed with the air flowing uninterruptedly from the vocal cords to the mouth or nose in a continuous sound, similar to vowels:

в/v, р/r, ј/j, л/l, љ/lj, н/n, њ/nj, м/m

Further classification is based on the movement of the lips or the position of the tongue inside the mouth in relation to the teeth and the palate when air flows into the mouth and through the throat:

- 1 Labial consonants: **б/b, п/p, ф/f** are formed with the lips pressed against each other or the upper teeth pressed against the lower lip.
- 2 Dental consonants: **д/d, т/t, з/z, с/s, ц/c, н/n, р/r, л/l** are formed with the tongue pressing against the teeth.
- 3 Palatal consonants: **ђ/đ, њ/ć, ч/č, њ/dž, ж/ž, ш/š** are formed with the tongue pressed against the palate.
- 4 Velar consonants: **г/g, к/k, х/h** are formed with the tongue pressed further back against the palate, creating a more guttural sound.

The twenty-five consonants are classified in the following groups:

- 1 Voiced and unvoiced.
- 2 Soft (palatal and palatalised) and hard (non-palatal and non-palatalised).

Not all consonants can stand next to each other and there are certain rules applicable to the clustering of consonants. In such instances, either consonants mutate or a fleeting *a* is introduced to separate them. Mutation of consonants occurs through consonantal assimilation or contraction.

4.1.1 Voiced and unvoiced consonants

When in pronouncing a consonant, the vocal cords are tense and vibrating, the consonant is said to be *voiced*. When the vocal cords are

relaxed and are not vibrating, the consonant is said to be *unvoiced* or *voiceless*. Of the twenty-five consonants, fourteen form pairs in which the only difference between the two consonants forming the pair is that one is voiced and the other is not.

- 1 Voiced consonants: б/б г/g д/d љ/đ ж/ž з/z ш/š ч/č
- 2 Unvoiced (voiceless) consonants: п/p к/k т/t һ/с ш/š с/s ч/č

A *voiced obstruent* consonant cannot stand in front of an unvoiced consonant in one word. Should this occur, the voiced consonant is replaced by its unvoiced partner:

сладак (m) – **слатка** (f) **sladak** (m) – **slatka** (f) sweet

тежак (m) – **тешка** (f) **težak** (m) – **teška** (f) heavy

Equally, an unvoiced consonant cannot stand in front of a voiced obstruent consonant in one word. When it does, the unvoiced consonant is replaced by its voiced partner:

сват – **свадба** **svat** – **svadba** wedding guest – a wedding

Thus, when a group, or cluster, of two or more of the fourteen consonants above come together in one word, the last consonant determines whether the cluster becomes voiced or voiceless.

There are exceptions to this rule. The letter д/d does not change to its unvoiced partner т/t in spelling, though it does in pronunciation when standing before a с/s or a ш/š, with words prefixed with **над/nad-**, **од/od-**, **пред/pred-**, **под/pod-**, etc., or with the suffixes **-ски/ski** or **-ство/stvo**:

одштета **odšteta** compensation

градски **gradski** city

председник **predsednik** president

Of the remaining consonants, seven are voiced and have no unvoiced partner:

ј/j **л/l** **љ/lj** **р/r** **м/m** **н/n** **њ/nj**

while three are unvoiced:

х/h **ф/f** **ц/c**

4.1.2 Soft and hard consonants

The distinction between soft and hard consonants is whether or not in the formation of the consonant the tongue is raised to the palate.

Those consonants during the formation of which the tongue is raised to the palate:

ц/с ч/ч̣ ħ/ć ɸ/dʒ ш/š ж/ž j/j

are referred to as *palatal* consonants and are said to be *soft*.

Although the consonant **ц/с** is not pronounced as soft, it acts as a soft consonant in declensional endings.

The *dental* consonants **т/т**, **д/д**, **н/н** and **л/л**, which although *hard* consonants as they are formed with the tongue pressing against the teeth, are softened when the letter **ј**, formed with the tongue pressing against the palate, is added to them and the two are spoken simultaneously. These consonants then become palatalised:

ћ/ћ̣ њ/dj њ/nj љ/lj

All the remaining consonants are said to be hard.

4.1.3 Consonantal assimilations

Consonantal assimilation occurs when, in specific linguistic conditions, certain consonants regularly replace certain other consonants. This can occur in the following conditions:

- 1 When two or more consonants from the group of voiced and unvoiced consonants come together, the whole cluster will be either voiced or unvoiced, in agreement with the last consonant. (See Section 4.1.1 Voiced and unvoiced consonants.) The alternations that occur are as follows:

п/р alternates with **б/в**

т/т **д/д**

к/к **г/г**

с/с **з/з**

ш/ш̣ **ж/ж̣**

ћ/ћ̣ **њ/њ̣**

ч/ч̣ **џ/џ̣**

- 2 When the hard consonants **с/с** or **з/з** occur before the soft consonants **љ/lj** and **њ/nj**, they are replaced by their own palatal (softened) equivalent (see Section 4.1.2 Soft and hard consonants):

мрзети – мржња **mrzeti – mržnja** to hate – hatred

мислити – мишљење **misлити – mišljenje** to think – opinion

- 3 When the letter **б/б** is preceded by **н/n**, the latter often changes to **м/m**:

стан – стамбен stan – stamben flat – residential

4.1.4 Consonantal contractions

Consonantal contractions are applied when, in forming a word out of two words or adding a prefix to a word, double consonants occur. In Serbian one word (with certain exceptions) cannot contain double consonants:

пет – пет +	pet – pet +	five – five + ten – fifty
десет – педесет	deset – pedeset	
без – без +	bez – bez +	without – without +
звучан – беззвучан	zvučan – bezvučan	sound – soundless

This rule also applies to words with a fleeting **a**: when a fleeting **a** drops out, **т/t** (or **д/d**) and **ц/c** can come together, becoming just **ц/c**:

отац – отаца – ц =	otac – otaca – c =	father
тс – оттца – оца (gen.)	ts – ottca – oca (gen.)	
судац – судаца – ц =	sudac – sudaca – c =	judge
тс – судца – суца (gen.)	ts – sudca – suca (gen.)	

It does not, however, apply to adjectives in the superlative beginning with **j**, in which case the double **j** remains:

најјачи најјаћи strongest
најјужнији најјужнији southernmost

Consonantal contractions also occur with consonants **т/t** and **д/d**, which are usually dropped when they occur between any of the following two consonants, of which the first may be **с/s**, **ш/š**, **з/z**, **ж/ž** followed by **б/b**, **к/k**, **л/l**, **љ/lj**, **м/m**, **н/n** or **њ/nj**:

частан (m) – часна (f)	častan (m) – časna (f)	honourable
жалостан (m) – жалосна (f)	žalostan (m) – žalosna (f)	sad

This rule does not apply to words ending in the suffixes **-ство/stvo** or **-штво/štvo**:

СТАНОВНИШТВО stanovništvo	population
МНОШТВО mnoštvo	multitude

4.1.5 Fleeting a

Although many consonant clusters do occur at the end of a word – **бицикл/bicikl** (bicycle), **филм/film** (film), **диск/disk** (disc), **дигирент/dirigent** (conductor), etc. – the following consonant clusters are traditionally considered to be the only clusters that can occur at the end of a word:

-ст -st

-шт -št

-зд -zd

-жд -žd

A word ending in any other combination of consonants will generally have a fleeting a inserted before the final consonant.

This insertion of the fleeting a occurs in the nominative singular and genitive plural of many nouns:

ловац ловac hunter (m nom. sg.)

ловца ловca hunter (m gen. sg.)

ловаца ловaca hunters (m gen. pl.)

девојка devojka young girl (f nom. sg.)

девојака devojaka young girls (f gen. pl.)

as well as in the formation of various tenses, including the past tense masculine singular participle ending -ao:

1 **рек + л рек + l** (he) said (see Section 4.1.6 Change of

2 **рекал рекаl** л/l to o)

3 **рекао рекао**

1 **плак + л плак + l** (he) cried (see Section 4.1.6 Change of

2 **плакал плакаl** л/l to o)

3 **плакао плакао**

The fleeting a occurs in the prepositions **с/s** (with) in the instrumental, and (off) in the genitive case, and **к/k** (towards) in the dative case, where the preposition **с/s** has to have the form **ca/sa** before a word beginning with **с/s**, **з/z**, **ш/š** or **ж/ž**, and the preposition **к/k** has to have the form **ka/ka** before a word beginning **к/k** or **г/g**, to avoid double consonants occurring:

са сином	sa sinom	with (my) son
са шунком	sa šunkom	with ham
ка Крагујевцу	ka Kragujevcu	towards Kragujevac
ка кући	ka kući	towards (the) house

4.1.6 Change of л/l to о

The letter л/l changes to о at the end of a word in the following instances:

- 1 All masculine singular active past participle endings:

чекати/čekati (to wait)					
радити/raditi (to work)					
Masculine		Neuter		Feminine	
чекао	чекао	чекало	čekalo	чекала	čekala
радио	radio	радио	radilo	радила	radila

- 2 A few adjectives in the masculine singular:

топло/toplo (warm) (neuter form)					
дебело/debelo – (fat) (neuter form)					
Masculine		Neuter		Feminine	
топао	топао	топло	toplo	топла	topla
дебео	debeo	дебело	debelo	дебела	debela

- 3 Masculine nouns **угао/ugao**, **део/deo**, **сто/sto**, **во/vo** and the feminine noun **со/so** end in о in the nominative singular, while the letter л/l appears in the nominative plural and other cases:

угао (nom. sg.)	ugao (nom. sg.)	corner
углови (nom. pl.)	uglovi (nom. pl.)	
угла (gen. sg.)	ugla (gen. sg.)	

СТО (nom. sg.)	sto (nom. sg.)	table
СТОЛОВИ (nom. pl.)	stolovi (nom. pl.)	
СТОЛА (gen. sg.)	stola (gen. sg.)	
ДЕО (nom. sg.)	deo (nom. sg.)	part
ДЕЛОВИ (nom. pl.)	delovi (nom. pl.)	
ДЕЛА (gen. sg.)	dela (gen. sg.)	
ВО (nom. sg.)	vo (nom. sg.)	ox
ВОЛОВИ (nom. pl.)	volovi (nom. pl.)	
ВОЛА (gen. sg.)	vola (gen. sg.)	
СО (nom. sg.)	so (nom. sg.)	salt
СОЛИ (nom. pl.)	solli (nom. pl.)	
СОЛИ (gen. sg.)	solli (gen. sg.)	

When a masculine noun ends in **-ao**, this is usually an example of *fleeting a* (as in **угао/ugao**, all of the other forms of which have **угл/ugl** – see above). There are also examples of masculine nouns ending in **-eo** in the nominative singular which have **ел/el** in all the forms, such as **део/deo** (see above).

- 4 Nouns ending in the suffix **-лац/lac**, where the **л/l** is retained in the nominative singular and genitive plural but is replaced by **o** in all other instances, as **л/l** changes to **o** at the end of a syllable which precedes a syllable beginning with **ц/c**:

гледалац (nom. sg.)	gledalac (nom. sg.)	member of the
гледалаца (gen. pl.)	gledalaca (gen. pl.)	audience, viewer
гледаоцу (dat. sg.)	gledaocu (dat. sg.)	
мислилац (nom. sg.)	misilac (nom. sg.)	thinker
мислилаца (gen. sg.)	misilaca (gen. sg.)	
мислиоце (acc. pl.)	mislioce (acc. pl.)	

When the **л/l** is not final, it is not replaced by the **o**:

чекала **čekala** (she) waited

топла **topla** warm (f)

4.1.7 J changes

The letter **j** and its effect on other consonants is of particular importance in Serbian. The letter **j** is a soft sounding consonant. In the past whenever this letter followed another consonant, certain changes occurred.

Many of these changes have been retained and are part of the language today.

The letter *j* is used in forming the following:

- 1 The comparative of adjectives (see Section 9.6 Comparative adjectives):

сладак – слађи sladak – slađi sweet – sweeter

- 2 The past passive participle of verbs (see Section 9.8 Verbal adjectives):

носити – ношен nositi – nošen to carry – carried
с + j = ш s + j = š

ослободити – osloboditi – to liberate – liberated
ослобођен oslobođen
д + j = ђ d + j = đ

- 3 Nouns formed from verbal adjectives and other nouns ending with the suffixes *-je* and *-ja*:

ослобођен – oslobođen – liberated – liberation
ослобођење oslobođenje

кап – капља кап – капља a drop

- 4 The instrumental singular ending of feminine nouns ending in *-ju/ju*:

љубав – ljubav – love – with love
с љубављу s ljubavlju

The following are the effects of the letter *j* on other consonants:

д/d + j changes to ђ/đ

т/t + j ћ/ć

л/l + j љ/lj

н/n + j њ/nj

з/z + j ж/ž

с/s + j ш/š

п/p + j пљ/plj

б/b + j бљ/blj

в/v + j вљ/vlj

м/m + j мљ/mlj

к/к	+ j	changes to	ч/č
х/х	+ j		ш/š
г/г	+ j		ж/ž
ст/st	+ j		шћ/šć
зд/zd	+ j		жд/žd

There are, however, some nouns and adjectives in which **j** does not affect the preceding **с/s** or **з/z** consonant:

коза – козји	koza – kozji	goat – goat's (concerning a goat)
клас – класје	klas – klasje	ear of grain – ears of grain

4.1.8 Effects of **e/e** and **и/i** on **к/к**, **г/г** and **х/х**

The following consonant replacements:

к/к	to	ч/č
г/г		ж/ž
х/х		ш/š

occur before the letter **e** in the vocative case:

војник – војниче	vojnĭk – vojniče	soldier
Бог – Боже	Bog – Bože	God
дух – душе	duh – duše	ghost

or before the **-e-** endings in the present tense:

пећи	peći	to bake
пек + е =	pek + e =	stem + present tense -e- ending
печем	pečem	1st p.sg. but
пекү	peku	stem + 3rd p.pl. -ү/u ending
вүћи	vući	to pull
вүк + е =	vuĭk + e =	stem + present tense -e- ending
вүчем	vučem	1st p.sg. but
вүкү	vuĭku	stem + 3rd p.pl. -ү/u ending

стрићи	strići	to shear
стриг + е =	strig + e =	stem + present tense -e- ending
слажем	strižem	1st p.sg. but
стригу	strigu	stem + 3rd p.pl. -y/u ending

The following consonant replacements:

к/k	to	ц/c
г/g		з/z
х/h		с/s

occur before the letter **и/i** in the following instances:

- 1 In the plural declension of masculine and neuter nouns in all cases except masculine genitive and accusative and neuter nominative, genitive and accusative:

војник – војници	vojnik – vojnici	soldier
бубрег – бубрези	bubreg – bubrezi	kidney
дух – дуси	duh – dusi	ghost

- 2 In the singular declension of feminine nouns ending in these consonants in the dative and locative cases:

рука – рүци	ruka – ruci	arm
нога – нози	noga – nozi	leg

There are, however, many exceptions to this rule, where the final consonant does not change:

бака – баки	baka – baki	grandmother
Анка – Анки	Anka – Anki	Anka (woman's name)
Олга – Олги	Olga – Olgi	Olga (woman's name)
Београђанка – Београђанки	Beograđanka – Beograđanki	a woman from Belgrade
Босанка – Босанки	Bosanka – Bosanki	a Bosnian woman
фризерка – фризерки	frizerka – frizerki	a hairdresser (other female occupational names also do not change)
патка – патки	patka – patki	a duck

- 3 In the imperative:
секу – сеци! **seku – seci!** cut!

4.2 Vowels

In addition to the five vowels:

а е и/и о у/у

the letter **п/р** in Serbian behaves as a sixth vowel sound when it is found placed between two consonants:

хрт hrt greyhound

трг trg market square

The pronunciation of vowels in Serbian always remains constant, regardless of the letters preceding or following them, and it is important that vowels are pronounced correctly because of the different vowel endings, all of which denote a particular meaning:

ЧЕСТИТАМО čestitamo we congratulate

ЧЕСТИТАТЕ čestitate you (pl.) congratulate

4.2.1 Length and stress

Depending on its pronunciation, a vowel may be either long or short. In Serbian, all vowels may be both. The distinction is important in words only differentiated by the length of the vowel:

г^ад gr^аd city

г^ад grad hail

4.2.2 Vowel mutations

Vowel mutations generally occur with soft consonants, where the vowels **о** and **е** interchange. These changes are evident in the following instances:

- 1 With possessive adjectives, the **-ов/ov** ending is replaced by an **-ев/ev** ending when the preceding consonant is soft:

ЧОВЕКОВ сат čovekov sat a man's watch

ВОДИЧЕВ ауто vodičev auto a guide's car

- 2 The suffix **-овати/ovati** changes in some instances to **-евати/evati** when the preceding consonant is soft:

бичевати bičevati to whip

бичовати bičovati (though this form is also possible)

- 3 In the instrumental case, where masculine and neuter singular nouns generally take the **-ом/om** ending, after a soft consonant the ending changes to **-ем/em**, except with most foreign words, where the **-ом/om** ending remains in use:

са мајмунџом sa majmunom with a monkey

са слонићем sa slonićem with a little elephant

са Раџом sa Radžom with Raj

Chapter 5

Stress

A word is pronounced with an accent (stress) on one of its vowels. This accent may have a rising pitch or a falling pitch, which may be on a long vowel or on a short vowel.

There are thus four possibilities:

- 1 a long rising stress;
- 2 a long falling stress;
- 3 a short rising stress;
- 4 a short falling stress.

Words are generally written with an accent mark only to indicate instances where the choice of accent makes the difference between one word and another.

5.1 Word stress and tone

The general rule regarding stress is that it can fall on any syllable except the last, although there are exceptions to the rule, e.g. **матурант/ maturant** (a high school graduate), where the stress falls on the final syllable.

In a word of two syllables, the stress will fall on the first syllable:

кола	kola	car
пиво	pivo	beer

In a three-syllable word, it will fall on either the first or the second syllable:

Милија	Milija	Milija (man's name)
судија	sudija	judge
сладолед	sladoled	ice-cream

In the common speech of Belgrade, where the stressed syllable of a word distinguishes long vs short, unstressed syllables have almost exclusively short vowels in them, with the long vowel generally carrying the stress. In more classical pronunciations, and certainly in the speech of people from Bosnia, there can be several long vowels in the same word even when they are not the stressed vowel.

5.2 Shift of stress

A shift of stress may occur when a *proclitic* (e.g. a preposition) precedes a word only if the first syllable of the word has a falling stress. The stress will then shift onto the last syllable of the previous word, the proclitic. The stress on the proclitic then becomes a short falling or rising stress.

Ишли су ка кући. Išli su ka kući. They went towards the house.

If the word following the proclitic has a rising stress on the first syllable, this rule does not apply.

5.3 Sentence stress

Although each word has its own particular stress and tone, generally speaking, the more important a word is in the sentence, the heavier its stress will be. This explains why one word may seem to be changing stress depending on the context and its importance in it.

Part III

Parts of speech

Verbs

Verbs are words used to indicate the following:

- 1 that someone or something is at a particular moment in time carrying out a certain action:

Милена фарба косу.	Milena farba kosu.	Milena is dyeing her hair.
-------------------------------	-------------------------------	-------------------------------

- 2 that something is happening:

Наоблачило се.	Naoblačilo se.	Clouds have gathered.
-----------------------	-----------------------	-----------------------

- 3 that someone or something is in a certain condition or state:

Свако јутро спavam до 8 сати.	Svako jutro spavam do 8 sati.	Every morning I sleep until 8 o'clock.
--	--	---

Depending on the type and nature of the activity, verbs can be divided into:

- 1 Transitive verbs – verbs which can take a direct object:

Ана је понела торбу са собом.	Ana je ponela torbu sa sobom.	Anna took her bag with her.
--	--	--------------------------------

- 2 Intransitive verbs – verbs which do not take a direct object:

Сви смо заједно отишли у биоскоп.	Svi smo zajedno otišli u bioskop.	We went all together to the cinema.
--	--	--

Depending on the duration of the action which a verb denotes, verbs can have two aspects:

- 1 Imperfective verbs indicate a lasting action in the past, the present or the future:

На мору се купамо сваког дана.	Na moru se kupamo svakog dana.	At the seaside we bathe (ourselves) every day.
купати	kupati	to bathe (imperfective)
На мору ћемо се купати сваког дана.	Na moru ćemo se kupati svakog dana.	At the seaside we will bathe every day.

2 Perfective verbs indicate a past complete action or a future complete action:

Окупао се пре изласка.	Okupao se pre izlaska.	He had a bath before going out.
окупати	okupati	to bathe (perfective)
Окупаће се пре изласка.	Okupaće se pre izlaska.	He will have a bath before going out.

A verb consists of two parts: a stem and an ending. Each verb has two stems, an *infinitive stem* and a *present tense stem*. With some verbs the two stems are identical, but with most they differ. All the verbal forms are formed from these two stems, reflecting their conjugation and tense.

Verbs are given in the dictionary in the infinitive. The infinitive of a verb does not reflect *number*, *person* or *gender*. In English, the infinitive consists of two words: the word ‘to’ plus the verb itself: ‘to buy, to drive, to read’, etc. This is not the case in Serbian where the infinitive consists of the stem of the verb, to which one of several endings is added: **купити/kupiti** (to buy), **доћи/doći** (to come), **треснути/tresti** (to shake).

There are three main types of conjugations, depending on the infinitive ending. In addition to the above, the time of the action, whether it took place in the past or present, or is to take place some time in the future, is indicated by the *tense* of the verb. Tenses covered in this book include the perfect (past) tense, the present tense, the future tense, future II and the aorist tense. The present and aorist consist of a single verb; the remaining tenses are compound tenses, formed from the main verb and an auxiliary verb.

Он воли фудбал.	On voli fudbal.	He likes football. (present)
Волео је позориште.	Voleo je pozorište.	He liked the theatre. (past)

Serbian verbs conjugate. This means they change form depending on the person or persons performing the action, and sometimes on the gender, if it is expressed by the verb. A verb conjugation consists of a singular and a plural form, referred to as *number*, of the 1st person (I), 2nd person (you) and 3rd person (he, she, or it) in the singular, and in the plural, 1st person (we), 2nd person (you) and 3rd person (they). This is referred to as *person* and is reflected in the ending added to the basic stem of the verb. In most compound tenses, verbs also reflect whether the doer of the action is of masculine, feminine or neuter gender. This is referred to as *gender*.

Идем на море сутра.	Idem na more sutra.	<i>I'm going to the coast tomorrow. (1st p.sg.)</i>
Биле су у биоскопу са нама.	Bile su u bioskopu sa nama.	<i>They were at the cinema with us. (f pl.)</i>

When two verbs are found in a sentence, one of which is a *modal* verb (can, may, should, need to, ought to, have to, be able to), expressing an attitude, judgement, interpretation or feeling, the two verbs are linked together with the conjunction **да/da** (that/to) or by means of putting the second verb into the infinitive (see Section 6.1 Infinitives – classification):

Треба да идемо на скијање зими.	Treba da idemo na skijanje zimi.	<i>We should go skiing in the winter.</i>
--	---	---

6.1 Infinitives – classification

The infinitive is the simplest form of a verb. It is the form under which a verb is listed in a dictionary. This form does not give information on the number or persons performing the action denoted by the verb nor is it part of a tense (except in the future tense).

In English the infinitive of a verb is preceded by the word 'to': 'to eat, to sleep, to go', etc., while in Serbian the infinitive consists of only one word **јести/jesti** (to eat), **спавати/spavati** (to sleep), **ићи/ići** (to go).

The infinitive form of a verb can be used in the following instances:

- (a) With modal verbs – verbs which cannot stand on their own but precede another verb (can, may, might, must, should, need to, ought to, have to, be able to) (see Section 6.18 Modal verbs):

! **Морате пожурити. Morate požuriti.** You must hurry.

- 2 **Треба веровати. Treba verovati.** One needs to believe.

In (1) the modal verb **морати/morati** (must) has been conjugated in the 2nd person plural – ‘you’ – and is followed by the infinitive. In (2) the modal verb **требати/trebat** (need to) has been conjugated in the 3rd person singular, and as the verb in the infinitive following it does not give further information on the person performing the action, in English the subject is given as ‘one’.

- (b) In forming the future tense (see Section 6.6 Future tense):

- 1 **Радници ће радити. Radnici će raditi.** The workers will work.
- 2 **Киша ће падати. Kiša će padati.** Rain will fall.

All verbs in Serbian have an infinitive form. The infinitive form falls into one of three main types depending on its endings. The infinitive endings will determine how a verb conjugates through the tenses. Generally, a verb’s present tense type will depend on its infinitive ending. It is necessary to learn the infinitive of a verb as well as its endings.

The infinitive is essentially formed from the infinitive stem with the addition of **-ти/ti** or **-ћи/ći**. Due to consonantal and other assimilations that occurred in the past, we have the following infinitive endings:

When following a vowel:

-ти/ti	прљати	prljati	to dirty
	гледати	gledati	to watch
-ћи/ći	ићи	ići	to go

When following a consonant:

-ивати/ivati*	избацивати	izbacivati	to throw out
-овати/ovati*	образовати	obrazovati	to educate
-авати/avati*	обећавати	obećavati	to promise

When following either a vowel or a consonant:

-сти/sti	јести	jesti	to eat
	гристи	gristi	to bite
	гребсти	grepsti	to scratch

* The endings **-ивати/ivati**, **-овати/ovati**, **-авати/avati** are in fact suffixes used to make a verb out of another verb. Strictly speaking, the suffixes are **-ива/iva**, **-ова/ova**, **-ава/ava**, and **-ти/ti** is the ending that nearly all verbs take to form their infinitives (see Section 6.3.2 Imperfective and perfective verbs).

Some verbs have dual infinitive endings:

дићи – дигнути	díći – dignuti	to raise
подићи – подигнути	podíći – podignuti	to raise
маћи – макнути	maći – maknuti	to remove
таћи – такнути	taći – taknuti	to touch
избећи – избегнути	izbeći – izbegnuti	to avoid
истаћи – истакнути	istaći – istaknuti	to emphasise
навићи – навикнути	navići – naviknuti	to get used to
означавати – означивати	označavati – označivati	to mark
омогућавати – омогућивати	omogućavati – omogućivati	to enable

Depending on the infinitive ending, there are three main types of conjugation:

- 1 Type I conjugation – infinitives ending in: **-ати/ati**, with all endings containing the vowel **a**.
- 2 Type II conjugation – infinitives ending in: **-ати/ati**, **-ти/ti**, **-овати/ovati**, **-ивати/ivati**, **-ути/uti**, **-ети/eti**, **-сти/sti**, **-ћи/ći**, with the present tense ending containing the vowel **e**.
- 3 Type III conjugation – infinitives ending in: **-ити/iti**, **-ети/eti**, **-ати/ati**, with most endings containing the vowel **и/i**.

6.2 Infinitive and present tense stems

The infinitive stem is formed in the following manner:

- 1 In verbs which have a vowel preceding the **-ти/ti** ending, the ending is dropped:

Infinitive	Infinitive stem	Infinitive	Infinitive stem	
певати	пева	pevati	peva	to sing
чекати	чека	čekati	čeka	to wait

- 2 In verbs ending in **-сти/sti** and **-ћи/ći**, in the aorist tense (see Section 6.7 Aorist tense), the 1st person singular ending **-ох/oh** is dropped:

Infinitive	Aorist	Infinitive stem	Infinitive	Aorist	Infinitive stem	
1st p.sg.		1st p.sg.				
сести	седох	сед	sesti	sedox	sed	to sit
доћи	дођох	дођ	doći	dođoh	dođ	to come

The present tense stem is formed by dropping the personal ending from the 1st person singular:

Present tense	Present tense stem	Present tense	Present tense stem
1st p.sg.		1st p.sg.	
певам	пева	pevam	peva
дођем	дође	dođem	dođe

While with some verbs, the infinitive stem and the present tense stem are the same, with most verbs these two stems will differ:

Infinitive	Infinitive stem	Present tense	Present tense stem
		1st p.sg.	
ћутати	ћута	ћутим	ћути
ćutati	ćuta	ćutim	ćuti
пећи	пек	печем	пече
реći	рек	реčem	рече

It is recommended that both the infinitive and the present tense 1st person singular form of the verb be learnt.

6.2.1 Type I conjugation

This conjugation applies to verbs in which the infinitive always ends in **-ати/ati**. The endings of these verbs contain the vowel **a**:

Conjugation of **знати/znati** (to know) present tense

sg.	1st p.	ја	знам	ја	znam	I know
	2nd p.	ти	знаш	ти	znaš	you know
	3rd p.	он/она/ оно	зна	он/она/ оно	zna	he/she/it knows
pl.	1st p.	ми	знамо	ми	znamo	we know
	2nd p.	ви	знате	ви	znate	you know
	3rd p.	они	знају	они	znaju	they know
		оне		оне		
		она		она		

In the 3rd person plural these verbs take the ending **-jy/ju**.

The following verbs conjugate in this way:

требати – треба́м	trebati – trebam	to need – I need
требају	trebaju	3rd p.pl.
требао/требала/ требало	trebao/trebala/ trebalo	past tense (masc./fem./neut.)
морати – мора́м	morati – moram	to have to – I have to
морају	moraju	3rd p.pl.
морао	morao	past tense
имати – има́м	imati – imam	to have – I have
имају	imaju	3rd p.pl.
имао	imao	past tense
немати – нема́м	nemati – nemam	not to have – I don't have
немају	nemaju	3rd p.pl.
немао	nemao	past tense

6.2.2 Type II conjugation

This conjugation applies to verbs with infinitive endings in **-ати/ati**, **-ити/iti**, **-овати/ovati**, **-евати/evati**, **-ивати/ivati**, **-ути/uti**, **-ети/eti**, **-сти/sti**, **-ћи/ći**. In this conjugation, the present tense ending contains the vowel *e*.

This conjugation also contains all the verbs which have a modified stem in the present tense:

Conjugation of **викнути/viknuti** (to shout) present tense

sg.	1st p.	ја	викнем	ја	viknem	I shout
	2nd p.	ти	викнеш	ти	vikneš	you shout
	3rd p.	он/она/ оно	викне	он/она/ оно	vikne	he/she/ it shouts
pl.	1st p.	ми	викнемо	ми	viknemo	we shout
	2nd p.	ви	викнете	ви	viknete	you shout
	3rd p.	они	викну	они	viknu	they shout
		оне		оне		
		она		она		

In the 3rd person plural these verbs take the ending **-у/у**, except for some verbs with the infinitive ending in **-ети/eti**.

- 1 In verbs with the infinitive ending in **-овати/ovati**, **-евати/evati**, **-ивати/ivati**, the first two letters of the infinitive endings change to **-уј/уј**, followed by the present tense ending:

Conjugation of **радовати/radovati** (to rejoice) present tense

sg.	1st p.	ја	радујем	ја	radujem	I rejoice
	2nd p.	ти	радујеш	ти	raduješ	you rejoice
	3rd p.	он/она/ оно	радује	он/она/ оно	raduje	he/she/it rejoice
pl.	1st p.	ми	радујемо	ми	radujemo	we rejoice
	2nd p.	ви	радујете	ви	radujete	you rejoice
	3rd p.	они	радују	они	raduju	they rejoice
		оне		оне		
		она		она		

- 2 When one of the following consonants precedes the infinitive ending **-ати/ati** (excluding those belonging to Type 1 conjugation), it changes to a soft consonant:

к/к – ч/č **г/g – ж/ž** **с/s – ш/š**
х/h – ш/š **т/t – ћ/ć** **з/z – ж/ž**

Conjugation of **писати/pisati** (to write) present tense

sg. 1st p.	ја	пишем	ја	pišem	I write
2nd p.	ти	пишеш	ti	pišeš	you write
3rd p.	он/она/ оно	пише	он/она/ оно	piše	he/she/it writes
pl. 1st p.	ми	пишемо	mi	pišemo	we write
2nd p.	ви	пишете	vi	pišete	you write
3rd p.	они	пишу	oni	pišu	they write
	оне		one		
	она		ona		

Sometimes a vowel is inserted into the stem:

Conjugation of **прати/prati** (to wash) present tense

sg. 1st p.	ја	перем	ја	perem	I wash
2nd p.	ти	переш	ti	pereš	you wash
3rd p.	он/она/ оно	пере	он/она/ оно	pere	he/she/it washes
pl. 1st p.	ми	перемо	mi	peremo	we wash
2nd p.	ви	перете	vi	perete	you wash
3rd p.	они	перу	oni	peru	they wash
	оне		one		
	она		ona		

The following verbs belong to this group:

СТИЗАТИ – СТИЖЕМ	stizati – stižem	to arrive – I arrive
СТИЖУ	stižu	3rd p.pl.
СТИЗАО, СТИЗАЛА, СТИЗАЛО	stizao, stizalo, stizala	past tense (masc./fem./neut.)
(ПО)СТИЗАН	(po)stizan	passive participle
ПОМАГАТИ – ПОМАЖЕМ	pomagati – pomažem	to help – I help
ПОМАЖУ	pomažu	3rd p.pl.
ПОМАГАО	pomagao	past tense
(ПОТ)ПОМАГАН	(pot)pomagan	passive participle
КРЕТАТИ – КРЕЋЕМ	kretati – krećem	to set off, move – I set off
КРЕЋУ	kreću	3rd p.pl.
КРЕТАО	kretao	past tense
(ПО)КРЕТАН	(po)kretan	passive participle
ЈАХАТИ – ЈАШЕМ	jahati – jašem	to ride – I ride
ЈАШУ	jašu	3rd p.pl.
ЈАХАО	jahao	past tense
ЈАХАН	jahan	passive participle
ВИКАТИ – ВИЧЕМ	vikati – vičem	to shout – I shout
ВИЧУ	viču	3rd p.pl.
ВИКАО	vikao	past tense
(ИЗ)ВИКАН	(iz)vikan	passive participle
ДИЗАТИ – ДИЖЕМ	dizati – dižem	to lift – I lift
ДИЖУ	dižu	3rd p.pl.
ДИЗАО	dizao	past tense
ДИЗАН	dizan	passive participle
БРАТИ – БЕРЕМ	brati – berem	to pick – I pick
БЕРУ	beru	3rd p.pl.
БРАО	brao	past tense
БРАН	bran	passive participle

Note: When a prefix-less verb does not form a passive participle, the passive participles are cited from a prefix-bearing verb.

- 3 Some verbs in this conjugation with an **-ети/eti** ending in the infinitive have an **-еју/eju** ending in the 3rd person plural:

доспети – доспеју	dospeti – dospeju	to reach/arrive
үмети – үмеју	umeti – umeju	to know how to
үспети – үспеју	uspeti – uspeju	to succeed
смети – смеју	smeti – smeju	to dare/be allowed to

- 4 A vowel may be inserted in the present tense stem of verbs with an infinitive ending in **-рети/reti** and **-лети/leti**:

млети – мељем	mleti – meljem	to grind
мељу	melju	3rd p.pl.
млео	mleo	past tense
(из)мељен	(iz)meljen	passive participle

- 5 Some verbs with an infinitive ending in **-ети/eti** or **-ати/ati** may have an **м/m** or **н/n** inserted in the present tense stem:

почети – почнем	početi – počnem	to begin
престати – престанем	prestati – prestanem	to stop
үзети – үзем	uzeti – uzmem	to take/get

- 6 Verbs ending in **-нути/nuti** lose the **y/u**:

метнути – метнем	metnuti – metnem	to put/place
погинүти – погинем	poginuti – poginem	to die
кренүти – кренем	krenuti – krenem	to set off/move

- 7 Some verbs with an infinitive ending in **-сти/sti** may have a **т/t** or **д/d**, often with an **н/n** inserted in the present tense stem:

јести – једем	jesti – jedem	to eat
срести – сретнем	sresti – sretnem	to meet
сести – седнем	sesti – sednem	to sit
пасти – паднем	pasti – padnem	to fall
үкрасти – үкрадем	ukrasti – ukradem	to steal
плести – плетем	plesti – pletem	to knit

- 8 Some verbs with infinitives in **-сти/sti** and **-ети/eti** may also have **с/s, з/z, п/p** or **б/b** inserted in the present tense stem:

превести – превезем	prevesti – превезем	to transport
превезу	prevezu	3rd p.pl.
превезао	prevezao	past tense
превежен	prevežen	passive participle

однети – однесем	odneti – odnesem	to carry away
однесу	odnesu	3rd p.pl.
однео	odneo	past tense
однет	odnet	passive participle

- 9 Some verbs with infinitives ending in **-ти/ti** are also in this conjugation. With those verbs, a **j** is inserted before the **e** ending of the present tense stem and in the formation of the passive participle:

убити – убијем	ubiti – ubijem	to kill
убију	ubiju	3rd p.pl.
убио	ubio	past tense
убијен	ubijen	passive participle

пити – пијем	piti – pijem	to gain
пију	piju	3rd p.pl.
пио	pio	past tense
(по)пијен	(po)pijen	passive participle

добити – добијем	dobiti – dobijem	to gain
добију	dobiju	3rd p.pl.
добио	dobio	past tense
добијен	dobijen	passive participle

Some verbs that insert this **j** have a **в/v** in the passive participle:

чути – чујем	čuti – čujem	to hear
чују	čuju	3rd p.pl.
чуо	čuo	past tense
чувен	čujen	passive participle

- 10 Verbs with infinitives ending in **-ћи/ći**. The **-ћи/ći** ending of these verbs was derived from the addition of the **-ти/ti** ending to one of the following consonants: **к/k, г/g, д/d** or **х/h** (**к/k + т/t = һ/ć**, **г/g + т/t = һ/ć**, etc.). Having undergone an assimilation in the formation of the infinitive, the original consonants reappear in the present tense stem of the verb.

In the perfect (past) tense masculine singular, an **a** is inserted before the past participle ending, while the **к/k** and **г/g** are retained:

моћи – мог + ти –	моći – mog + ti –	to be able to
могу	mogu	1st p.sg.
могао	mogao	past tense (masc.)

When **к/k** and **г/g** appear before an **e** they are usually followed by an **н/n**:

рећи – рек + ти –	reći – rek + ti –	to say/tell
рекнем	reknem	1st p.sg.
рекао	rekao	past tense

стићи – стиг + ти –	stići – stig + ti –	to arrive
стигнем	stignem	1st p.sg.
стигао	stigao	past tense

помоћи – помог + ти –	pomoci – pomog + ti –	to help
помогнем	pomognem	1st p.sg.
помогао	pomogao	past tense

However, these consonants may still undergo further changes when conjugated either in the present tense or in the other tenses:

- (a) When preceding an **e**:

к/k – **ч/ć**

рећи – рекнем –	reći – reknem –	to say
речен	rećen	passive participle

- (b) When preceding an **и/i**:

к/k – **ц/c**

г/g – **з/z**

вүћи – вүк + ти – вүци!	vući – vuk + ti – vuci!	to pull imperative
лећи – легнем – лези!	leći – legnem – lezi!	to lie down imperative
помоћи – помогнем – помози!	pomoći – pomognem – pomози	to help imperative

6.2.3 Type III conjugation

This conjugation applies to verbs in which the infinitive ends in **-ити/iti**, as well as in **-ети/eti** and **-ати/ati**. The endings of these verbs contain the vowel **и/i** in the present tense:

Conjugation of **говорити/govoriti** (to speak) present tense

sg. 1st p.	ја	говорим	ја	govorim	I speak
2nd p.	ти	говориш	ти	govoriš	you speak
3rd p.	он/она/ оно	говори	он/она/ оно	govori	he/she/it speaks
pl. 1st p.	ми	говоримо	ми	govorimo	we speak
2nd p.	ви	говорите	ви	govorite	you speak
3rd p.	они	говоре	они	govore	they speak
	оне		оне		
	она		она		

In the 3rd person plural these verbs take the ending **-e**.

The following are some verbs with an **-ити/iti** ending in this conjugation:

үчити – үчим –	učiti – učim –	to study
үче	učе	3rd p.pl.
үчио	učio	past tense (m)
үчен	učен	passive participle
хвалити – хвалим –	hvaliti – hvalim –	to praise
хвале	hvale	3rd p.pl.

хвалио	hvalio	past tense (m)
хваљен	hvaljen	passive participle
плашити – плашим –	plašiti – plašim –	to scare
плаше	plaše	3rd p.pl.
плашио	plašio	past tense (m)
плашен	plašen	passive participle
радити – радим –	raditi – radim –	to work/do
раде	rade	3rd p.pl.
радио	radio	past tense (m)
рађен	rađen	passive participle

The following are some verbs with an **-ети/eti** ending in this conjugation:

желети – желим –	želeti – želim –	to desire
желе	žele	3rd p.pl.
желео	želeo	past tense (m)
жељен	željen	passive participle
живети – живим –	živeti – živim –	to live
живе	žive	3rd p.pl.
живео	živeo	past tense (m)
(пре)живљен	(pre)življen	passive participle
мрзети – мрзим –	mrzeti – mrzim –	to hate
мрзе	mrze	3rd p.pl.
мрзео	mrzeo	past tense (m)
(о)мржен	(o)mržen	passive participle

The following are some verbs with an **-ати/ati** ending in this conjugation:

бројати – бројим –	brojati – brojim –	to count
броје	broje	3rd p.pl.
бројао	brojao	past tense (m)
(од)бројан	(od)brojan	passive participle

трчати – трчим –	trčati – trčim –	to run
трче	trče	3rd p.pl.
трчао	trčao	past tense (m)
(пре)трчан	(pre)trčan	passive participle
држати – држим –	držati – držim –	to hold
држе	drže	3rd p.pl.
држао	držao	past tense (m)
држан	držan	passive participle
постојати – постојим –	postojati – postojim –	to exist
постоје	postoje	3rd p.pl.
постојао	postojao	past tense (m)

Note: When a prefix-less verb does not form a passive participle, the passive participles are cited from a prefix-bearing verb.

6.3 Types of verbs and aspects

6.3.1 Transitive and intransitive verbs

The following types of verbs exist, depending on the type and nature of the activity:

- 1 Transitive verbs take a direct object:

Милош је купио	Miloš je kupio	Miloš <i>bought</i> a TV.
телевизор.	televizor.	

- 2 Intransitive verbs do not take a direct object:

Сваког дана	Svakog dana	Every day we <i>get up</i> at
уштајемо у исто	ustajemo u isto	the same time.
време.	vreme.	

- 3 Some verbs may be used both transitively and intransitively:

Он гледа кроз	On gleda kroz	He <i>is looking</i> through
прозор.	prozor.	the window.

Пас гледа мачку.	Pas gleda mačku.	The dog <i>is looking at</i>
		the cat.

Не волим брзо да једем.	Ne volim brzo da jedem.	I don't like to eat quickly.
Не једем хлеб са месом.	Ne jedem hleb sa mesom.	I don't eat bread with meat.

6.3.2 Imperfective and perfective verbs

Most Serbian verbs have two aspects, each reflecting the duration of the action or state described by the verb. One verb in the pair reflects the imperfective aspect and the other the perfective. The imperfective verb has its own infinitive, set of tenses and participles, and so does the perfective verb.

- The imperfective aspect indicates that the action or state expressed by the verb may be of unlimited duration, may still be in progress, or may be a repetitive, habitual action.

Пијем пиво без пене.	Pijem пиво bez pene.	I drink beer without a head (froth).
Редовно читам новине.	Redovno čitam novine.	I read the papers regularly.

There are two kinds of imperfective verbs:

- Durative verbs – the action of these verbs is continuous and uninterrupted with no foreseen completion:

Петар пише писмо својој мајци.	Petar piše pismo svojoj majci.	Peter is writing a letter to his mother.
---------------------------------------	---------------------------------------	--

- Iterative or frequentative verbs – the action of these verbs is interrupted or repeated frequently or at regular intervals:

Ана узима лек на сваки сат.	Ana uzima lek na svaki sat.	Anna takes her medicine every hour.
------------------------------------	------------------------------------	-------------------------------------

Imperfective verbs are generally used in the present tense. They can also be used in the past tense if the action lasted for a longer period of time or was repetitive.

Imperfective verbs are sometimes formed by the addition of a suffix to a perfective verb, or an infix to the infinitive stem:

- With the infix **и/i**:

<i>Perfective</i>	ПОЗВАТИ – ПОЗОВЕМ	pozvati – pozovem	to invite
-------------------	--------------------------	--------------------------	-----------

Imperfective **ПОЗИВАТИ – ПОЗИВАМ** **pozivati – pozivam** to call

(b) With the suffix **-ва/va**:

Perfective **ДАТИ – ДАМ** **dati – dam** to give

Imperfective **ДАВАТИ – ДАЈЕМ** **davati – dajem**

(c) With the suffix **-ава/ava**:

Perfective **ИЗВИНИТИ (СЕ) – ИЗВИНИМ (СЕ)** **izviniti (se) – izvinitim (se)** to apologise

Imperfective **ИЗВИЊАВАТИ (СЕ) – ИЗВИЊАВАМ (СЕ)** **izvinjavati (se) – izvinjavam (se)**

Before this suffix, the following hard consonants soften:

б/б – бљ/blj

н/n – њ/nj

сн/sn – шњ/šnj

ст/st – шт/št

т/t – ћ/ć

д/d – ђ/đ

л/l – љ/lj

м/m – мљ/mlj

п/p – пљ/plj

сл/sl – шљ/šlj

в/v – вљ/vlj

зн/zn – жњ/žnj

с/s – ш/š

з/z – ж/ž

If the perfective verb ends in **-ати/ati**, there is no consonant softening.

(d) With the suffix **-ива/iva** added to an **-ити/iti** verb:

Perfective **СРЕДИТИ – СРЕДИМ** **srediti – sredim** to tidy up, organise

<i>Imperfective</i>	сређивати – сређујем	sređivati – sređujem	
<i>Perfective</i>	обогатити – обогатим	obogatiti – obogatim	to enrich
<i>Imperfective</i>	обобаћивати – обобаћујем	obogaćivati – obogaćujem	

Before this suffix, the following hard consonants soften:

т/t –	ћ/ć
д/d –	ђ/đ
л/l –	љ/lj
м/m –	мљ/mlj
п/p –	пљ/plj
сл/sl –	шљ/šlj
в/v –	вљ/vlj
зн/zn –	жњ/žnj
с/s –	ш/š
з/z –	ж/ž
ст/st –	шћ/šć
зд/zd –	жд/žd
ф/f –	фљ/flj

(e) With the suffix **-ја/ја:**

<i>Perfective</i>	убити – убијем	ubiti – ubijem	to kill
<i>Imperfective</i>	убијати – убијам	ubijati – ubijam	
<i>Perfective</i>	састати се – састанемо се	sastati se – sastanemo se	to meet, get together
<i>Imperfective</i>	састајати се – састајемо се	sastajati – sastajemo se	(1st p.pl)

(f) With the suffix **-ова/ова:**

<i>Perfective</i>	купити – купим	kupiti – kupim	to buy
<i>Imperfective</i>	куповати – купујем	kupovati – kupuјem	

Some imperfective forms are created from perfective verbs, where the vowel before the infinitive ending changes to *-a-*. In these cases, the following root consonants soften:

т/t – һ/ć

ст/st – шт/št

в/v – вль/vlj

д/d – ђ/đ

з/z – ж/ž

в/v – вль/vlj

Perfective **СНИМИТИ –** **snimīti –** to record
 СНИМИМ **snimim**

Imperfective **СНИМАТИ –** **snimati –**
 СНИМАМ **snimam**

Perfective **НАМЕСТИТИ –** **nameštīti –** to fix, set up
 НАМЕСТИМ **nameštim**

Imperfective **НАМЕШТАТИ –** **nameštati –** to furnish, set up
 НАМЕШТАМ **nameštam**

Some imperfective forms end in *-ати/ati* while the perfective form ends in *-нути/nuti*:

Perfective **КРЕНУТИ –** **krenuti –** to move,
 КРЕНЕМ **krenem** set off

Imperfective **КРЕТАТИ –** **kretati –**
 КРЕЋЕМ **krećem**

Perfective **ГҮРНУТИ –** **gurnuti –** to push
 ГҮРНЕМ **gurnem**

Imperfective **ГҮРАТИ –** **gurati –**
 ГҮРАМ **guram**

Perfective **ЗАТЕГНУТИ –** **zategnuti –** to tighten
 ЗАТЕГНЕМ **zategnem**

Imperfective **ЗАТЕЗАТИ –** **zatezati –**
 ЗАТЕЖЕМ **zatežem**

Stems ending in hard consonants soften.

Some imperfective forms end in *-ати/ati* or *-ити/iti* while the basic perfective form ends in *-ети/eti*, *-сти/sti* or *-һи/ći*. These perfective forms may have a stem ending in any one of the following

consonants which disappear in the perfective infinitive but reappear in the present tense of the perfective and imperfective forms, including the imperfective infinitive: -м/м, -н/н, -т/т, -д/д, -к/к, -х/х.

<i>Perfective</i>	заузети – заузмет	zauzeti – zauzmem	to occupy
<i>Imperfective</i>	заузимати – заузимама	zauzimati – zauzimam	to be in the process of occupying
<i>Perfective</i>	сести – седнем	sesti – sednem	to sit
<i>Imperfective</i>	седати – седам	sedati – sedam	to be in the process of sitting

- 2 The perfective aspect indicates that the action or state expressed by the verb is completed or of limited duration and is perceived as a completed whole. Perfective verbs are generally used in the past tense or the future tense (or the infinitive):

Попила сам чашу коњака пре јела. **Popila sam čašu konjaka pre jela.** I drank a glass of cognac before my meal.

Прочитала сам добру књигу прошле недеље. **Pročitala sam dobru knjigu prošle nedelje.** I read a good book last week.

Добро је попити чашу млека пре спавања. **Dobro je popiti čašu mleka pre spavanja.** It's good to drink a glass of milk before going to sleep.

Perfective verbs cannot be used in the present tense to express present action, but only to describe a subject's desire in the present to carry out an action that is to be completed in the future. In the present tense they are used after the conjunctions **да/da** (that/to), **што/što** (that/to), **ако/ako** (if) and **кад/kad** (when):

Хоћу да прочитам ту књигу. **Hoću da pročitam tu knjigu.** I want to read that book.

These verbs can be used after the same conjunctions in the past and future tenses as well:

Окренуо се да погледа шта се догодило. **Okrenuo se da pogleda šta se dogodilo.** He turned around to take a look at what happened.

Зажалиће што су отишли с њим. **Zažaliće što otišli s njim.** They will regret that they had gone with him.

Perfective verbs are sometimes formed by adding a prefix (most of which are prepositional) to an imperfective verb, which becomes the basic verb, while the newly formed verb becomes a compound verb:

<i>Imperfective</i>	јести – једем	jesti – jedem	to be eating
<i>Perfective</i>	појести – поједем	pojesti – pojedem	to complete eating
<i>Imperfective</i>	бринүти – бринем	brinuti – brinem	to worry, be concerned
<i>Perfective</i>	забринүти – забринем	zabrinuti – zabrinem	to start worrying
<i>Imperfective</i>	ћүтати – ћүтим	ćutati – ćutim	to be silent
<i>Perfective</i>	үћүтати – үћүтим	ućutati – ućutim	to become silent

Every verb with a prefix added to it will become a new verb, which might then have a new, corresponding imperfective partner, in which case these two verbs become an aspectual pair. Thus, although there already exists the original imperfective verb to which the prefix had been added, the resulting prefixed perfective and its new aspectual partner may be independent of the original verb:

<i>Imperfective</i>	ставити	staviti	to put, place
<i>Perfective</i>	поставити	postaviti	to lay out
<i>Imperfective</i>	постављати	postavljati	to be laying out

Some prefixes may change the meaning of the verb:

<i>Imperfective</i>	писати – пишем	pisati – pišem	to write
<i>Perfective</i>	пописати – попишем	popisati – popišem	to list, make an inventory
<i>Imperfective</i>	пописивати – пописүјем	popisivati – popisujem	
<i>Perfective</i>	записати – запишем	zapisati – запиšem	to note down
<i>Imperfective</i>	записивати – записүјем	zapisivati – zapisujem	
<i>Perfective</i>	преписати – препишем	prepisati – prepíšem	to copy

Imperfective **преписивати – преписујем** **prepisivati – prepisujem**

Certain compound verbs have different stems for each aspect. Amongst these are the derivatives of **ићи/ićи** (to go):

Perfective **доћи – дођем** **doći – dođem** to come

Imperfective **долазити – долазим** **dolaziti – dolazim**

Perfective **отићи – одем/отидем** **otići – odem/otidem** to go

Imperfective **одлазити – одлазим** **odlaziti – odlazim**

Perfective **изаћи – изађем** **izaći – izađem** to go/
come out

Imperfective **излазити – излазим** **izlaziti – izlazim**

and the aspectual pairs of imperfectives ending in **-лагати/lagati** and perfectives ending in **-ложити/ložiti**:

Perfective **сложити – сложим** **složiti – složim** to fold

Imperfective **слагати – слажем** **slagati – slažem**

Perfective **предложити – предложим** **predložiti – predložim** to suggest

Imperfective **предлагати – предлагајем** **predlagati – predlažem**

Some verbs have one form that can express both aspects depending on the context:

видети **videti** to see

чути **čuti** to hear

доручковати **doručkovati** to have breakfast

ручати **ručati** to have lunch

вечерати **večerati** to have supper

ићи **ići** to go

контролисати **kontrolisati** to control

телефонирати **telefonirati** to telephone

While others express only the imperfective aspect:

бити	biti	to be
имати	imati	to have
држати	držati	to hold
морати	morati	must
становати	stanovati	to live, dwell

Some verbs could be said to form an aspectual pair with a completely different verb where they have become a pair only through their meaning:

<i>Perfective</i>	рећи/казати – кажем	reći/kazati – kažem	to say/tell
<i>Imperfective</i>	говорити – говорим	govoriti – govorim	to speak

6.4 Present tense

6.4.1 Formation of the present tense and its use

The present tense indicates that the action is being carried out at the present time. There is only one present tense in Serbian and it is formed with imperfective and perfective verbs, though with the latter it is used almost exclusively after the conjunctions **да/da**, **што/što**, **ако/ako**, **кад/kad**, to make a sort of subjunctive (see Section 6.3 Types of verbs and aspects).

The present tense is formed by the addition of personal endings to the present tense stem. Personal endings reveal what person and number is performing the action of the verb:

Present tense personal endings

sg.	1st p.	I	-м	-m
	2nd p.	you	-ш	-š
	3rd p.	he/she/it	-	-
pl.	1st p.	we	-мо	-mo
	2nd p.	you	-те	-te
	3rd p.	they	-е/-у/-ју	-e/-u/-ju

The vowel preceding these endings belongs to one of three conjugations. Each conjugation differs slightly, and this is reflected in the final endings of each verb (see Sections 6.2.1–3 for types of conjugations). The personal endings for 1st person singular and plural, and 2nd person singular and plural remain unchanged in all the conjugations. The 3rd person singular and plural endings may differ with each conjugation:

- 1 Endings for verbs in Type I conjugation, infinitives ending in **-ати/ati**, with all endings containing **a**:

Type I conjugation present tense personal endings				
sg.	1st p.	I	-ам	-am
	2nd p.	you	-аш	-aš
	3rd p.	he/she/it	-а	-a
pl.	1st p.	we	-амо	-amo
	2nd p.	you	-ате	-ate
	3rd p.	they	-ају	-aju

Verbs with the vowel **a** preceding any personal ending will have a **-ју/ju** ending in the 3rd person plural:

Infinitive	Present tense stem	Present tense	
		1st p.sg.	3rd p.pl.
причати	прича-	причам	причају
pričati	priča-	pričam	pričaju
читати	чита-	читам	читају
čitati	čita-	čitam	čitaju

- 2 Endings for verbs in Type II conjugation, infinitives ending in **-ати/ati**, **-ти/ti**, **-овати/ovati**, **-ивати/ivati**, **-ути/uti**, **-ети/eti**, **-сти/sti**, **-ћи/ći**, with all endings containing **e**:

Type II conjugation present tense personal endings

sg.	1st p.	I	-ем	-em
	2nd p.	you	-еш	-eš
	3rd p.	he/she/it	-е	-e
pl.	1st p.	we	-емо	-emo
	2nd p.	you	-ете	-ete
	3rd p.	they	-ү (eյү)	-u (eյu)

Verbs with the vowel e preceding any personal ending will have an -y/u ending in the 3rd person plural:

Infinitive	Present tense stem	Present tense	
		1st p.sg.	3rd p.pl.
казати (з – ж)	каже-	кажем	кажу
kazati	kaže-	kažem	kažu
прати	пере-	перем	перу
prati	pere-	perem	peru
үмети	үме-	үмем	үмејү
umeti	ume-	umem	umeju

- 3 Endings for verbs in Type III conjugation, infinitives ending in -ати/ati, -ити/iti, -ети/eti, with all endings containing и/i:

Type III conjugation present tense personal endings

sg.	1st p.	I	-им	-im
	2nd p.	you	-иш	-iš
	3rd p.	he/she/it	-и	-i
pl.	1st p.	we	-имо	-imo
	2nd p.	you	-ите	-ite
	3rd p.	they	-е	-e

Verbs with the vowel **и/i** preceding any personal ending will have an **-е** ending in the 3rd person plural:

Infinitive	Present tense stem	Present tense	
		1st p.sg.	3rd p.pl.
радити	ради-	радим	раде
raditi	radi	radim	rade
живети	живи-	живим	живе
živeti	živi	živim	žive

It is worth learning the combination of vowels preceding the personal endings for the 1st person singular and the 3rd person plural for all three types of conjugations as each is typical of its group:

а/у читам, читају а/у čitam, čitaju

е/у үмем, үмеју е/у umem, umeju

и/е живим, живе и/е živim, žive

The verb **бити/bititi** (to be) has two forms in the present tense:

1 A short form:

Present tense short form of бити/bititi (to be)				
sg.	1st p.	I am	ја сам	ja sam
	2nd p.	you are	ти си	ti si
	3rd p.	he/she/it is	он/она/ оно је	on/ona/ ono je
pl.	1st p.	we are	ми смо	mi smo
	2nd p.	you are	ви сте	vi ste
	3rd p.	they are	они/оне/ она су	oni/one/ ona su

This is the more frequently used form. When the subject is known, or has already been mentioned in a preceding sentence, the personal pronoun is generally omitted. It can be omitted because the verbal

endings will, in most instances, indicate person and number, while any nouns or adjectives referring to the subject will also indicate gender. The personal pronoun may in those instances be included for emphasis:

Она је моја сестра. Она је моја sestra. She is my sister.
Врло је лепа. Vrlo је lepa. She is very pretty.

2 A long form:

Present tense long form of **бити/bititi** (to be)

sg.	1st p.	I am	јесам	jesam
	2nd p.	you are	јеси	jesi
	3rd p.	he/she/it is	јест(е)*	jest(e)*
pl.	1st p.	we are	јесмо	jesmo
	2nd p.	you are	јесте	jeste
	3rd p.	they are	јесу	jesu

* 3rd p. sg. is also used to mean 'yes' **јесте/jeste**.

This form is quite restricted in its use and is generally only used when the verb occurs as the first word of a sentence or phrase, often in posing a question, when it is followed by the interrogative enclitic **ли/li**. It is also used in response to a question, often on its own, denoting an affirmative response:

Јеси ли била на пијаци данас? – Јесам. **Jesi li bila na pijaci danas? – Jesam.** Have you been to the market today? – Yes, I have.

Јесмо ли се договорили? – Јесмо. **Jesmo li se dogovorili? – Jesmo.** Have we reached an agreement? – Yes, we have.

When the 3rd person singular is followed by the interrogative enclitic **ли/li**, it has a different form: **је ли/je li**. The **је** here looks like the enclitic form of 'to be', but is not in fact an enclitic.

Although the personal pronoun is generally omitted with the long form, as it is already included in its formation, it can also be used:

Ми нисмо Енглези, али они јесу. Mi nismo Englezi, ali oni jesu. We're not English, but they are.

6.4.2 *The negative present tense*

The negative form of the present tense is formed by placing the negative particle **не/ne** before the verb. The two words are written separately. The only exceptions to this rule are the negative forms of the verbs **бити/bitī** (to be), **имати/imatī** (to have) and **хтети/hteti** (to want), where the two are written together.

Negative form of **бити/bitī** (to be)

sg.	1st p.	НИСАМ	nisam	I am not
	2nd p.	НИСИ	nisi	you are not
	3rd p.	НИЈЕ	nije	he/she/it is not
pl.	1st p.	НИСМО	nismo	we are not
	2nd p.	НИСТЕ	niste	you are not
	3rd p.	НИСУ	nisu	they are not

Не идем у град. *Ne idem u grad.* I'm not going to town.

Ја нисам инжењер. *Ja nisam inženjer.* I'm not an engineer.

Negative form of **имати/imatī** (to have)

sg.	1st p.	НЕМАМ	nemam	I have not
	2nd p.	НЕМАШ	nemaš	you have not
	3rd p.	НЕМА	nema	he/she/it has not
pl.	1st p.	НЕМАМО	nemamo	we have not
	2nd p.	НЕМАТЕ	nemate	you have not
	3rd p.	НЕМАЈУ	nemaju	they have not

For negative forms of **хтети/hteti**, see Section 6.6 Future tense.

6.4.3 *The interrogative present*

The following are ways in which to ask a question in the present tense:

- (a) By beginning the sentence with the verb, followed by the interrogative particle **ли/li**:

Волите ли пасуљ? *Volite li pasulj?* Do you like beans?

- (b) By beginning the sentence with **да ли/da li** followed by the verb:
Да ли волите пасуљ? *Da li volite pasulj?* Do you like beans?
- (c) By beginning the sentence with **је**, followed by the interrogative particle **ли/li** and the verb:
Је ли волите пасуљ? *Je li volite pasulj?* Do you like beans?

6.4.4 The negative interrogative present tense

This is formed by placing **зар/zar** before the negative form of the verb:

Зар не идемо у град? *Zar ne idemo u grad?* Are we not going to town?

Зар нисте инжењер? *Zar niste inženjer?* Are you not an engineer?

6.5 Past tense (perfect tense)

The main past tense in use today is the perfect tense. The imperfect and the pluperfect tenses are rarely in use in the spoken language and are not included in this book, while the aorist is covered in Section 6.7 Aorist tense.

The perfect tense corresponds to all the English past tenses: the simple past (I spoke), the continuous past (I was speaking), the habitual past (I used to speak) and the pluperfect (I had spoken).

6.5.1 Formation of the perfect tense and its use

The perfect tense is a compound tense formed using the short form* of the present tense of the verb **бити/bitī**, which reflects person and number and which becomes the auxiliary verb to the main verb and acts as an enclitic:

Present tense short form of **бити/bitī** (to be)

sg.	1st p.	I am	сам	sam
	2nd p.	you are	си	si
	3rd p.	he/she/it is	је	je
pl.	1st p.	we are	смо	smo
	2nd p.	you are	сте	ste
	3rd p.	they are	су	su

* The long form can also be used in forming the past tense, when used for emphasis.

and the main verb which has a past adjectival participle ending (see Section 9.8 Verbal adjectives) (also referred to as the indeclinable active past participle, the past participle, etc.) which agrees with the gender of the subject. Thus, this tense shows person, number and gender.

The formation of the past adjectival participle will depend on the infinitive ending of the verb concerned. Generally, it is formed by replacing the **-ти/ти** infinitive ending of the verb with an **-о/о** or **-л/л** to which the corresponding gender and number ending is added. The masculine singular ending is **-о/о**, the feminine singular ending is **-ла/ла**, and the neuter singular ending is **-ло/ло**. The plural endings are **-ли/ли** (masculine), **-ле/ле** (feminine) and **-ла/ла** (neuter):

Singular			Plural		
Masculine	Feminine	Neuter	Masculine	Feminine	Neuter
-о/о	-ла/ла	-ло/ло	-ли/ли	-ле/ле	-ла/ла

Thus, the perfect tense, i.e. past tense, of the verb **почети/роћети** (to start) would be:

sg.	1st p.	Ја сам почео/ почела	or	Почео/почела сам
		Ја сам роћео/ роћела		Роћео/Роћела сам
	2nd p.	Ти си почео/ почела		Почео/почела си
		Ти си роћео/роћела		Роћео/роћела си
	3rd p.	Он је почео/ Он је роћео		Почео је/ Роћео је
		Она је почела/ Она је роћела		Почела је/ Роћела је
Оно је почело/ Оно је роћело			Почело је/ Роћело је	
pl.	1st p.	Ми смо почели/ Ми смо роћели		Почели смо/ Роћели смо (m)
		Ми смо почеле/ Ми смо роћеље		Почеле смо/ Роћеље смо (f)

pl.	2nd p.	Ви сте почели/ Vi ste počeli	Почели сте/ Počeli ste (m)
		Ви сте почеле/ Vi ste počele	Почеле сте/ Počele ste (f)
3rd p.		Они су почели/ Oni su počeli	Почели су/ Počeli su (m)
		Оне су почеле/ One su počele	Почеле су/ Počele su (f)
		Она су почела/ Ona su počela	Почела су/ Počela su (n)

The verb **бити/biti** (to be) has its own past tense, made with an auxiliary and a participle, like any other verb. (Since the past adjectival participle denotes gender and number, the subject, especially if a pronoun, is often omitted.)

Perfect (past) tense of **бити/biti** (to be)

sg.	1st p.	Ја сам био/ била	or	Био/ била сам	I	have been/ was
		Ја sam bio/ bila		Bio/ bila sam		
	2nd p.	Ти си био/ била		Био/ била си	You	have been/ were
		Ti si bio/bila		Bio/bila si		
	3rd p.	Он је био/ Он је bio		Био је/ Bio је	He	has been/ was
		Она је била/ Она је bila		Била је/ Bila је	She	has been/ was
		Оно је било/ Оно је bilo		Било је/ Bilo је	It	has been/ was
pl.	1st p.	Ми смо били/ Mi smo bili		Били смо/ Bili smo	We (m)	have been/ were
		Ми смо биле/ Mi smo bile		Биле смо/ Bile smo	We (f)	have been/ were
	2nd p.	Ви сте били/ Vi ste bili		Били сте/ Bili ste	You (m)	have been/ were

	Ви сте биле/ Vi ste bile	Биле сте/ Bile ste	You (f)	have been/ were
pl. 3rd p.	Они су били/ Oni su bili	Били су/ Bili su	They (m)	have been/ were
	Оне су биле/ One su bile	Биле су/ Bile su	They (f)	have been/ were
	Она су била/ Ona su bila	Била су/ Bila su	They (n)	have been/ were

Био сам у биоскопу. **Bio sam u bioskopu.** I (m) was at the cinema.

Деца су била у школи. **Deca su bila u školi.** The children have been to school.

Почела сам да једем. **Počela sam da jedem.** I (f) have started to eat.

Ви сте почели да радите. **Vi ste počeli da radite.** You (pl.) have started to work.

The auxiliary verb **бити/bititi** must always be used in forming the perfect tense. It acts as an enclitic and must take second place, in accordance with the word order rule (see Section 13.1 Order and importance of enclitics).

Below are examples of verbs in the perfect tense which have endings other than **-ти/ti** in the infinitive.

The stems of infinitives ending in **-ћи/ći** are either with **-к/k** or with **-г/g**. In both cases, the past adjectival participle ending is added directly to the **-к/k** or **-г/g** stem, with the fleeting **a** inserted before the participle in the masculine singular. Where there is a **-сти/sti** infinitive ending, the stem and ending need to be looked at and learnt separately.

(плести, plesti)	(плетем, pletem)	плео/pleo плела/plela	to knit
(провести, provesti)	(проведем, provedem)	провео/proveo провела/provela	to spend
(срести, sresti)	(сретнем, sretnem)	срео/sreo срела/srela	to meet
(помоћи, pomoci)	(помогнем, pomognem)	помогао/pomogao* помогла/pomogla	to help

(рећи, reći)	(рекнем, reknem)	рекао/rekao* рекла/rekla	to say
(моћи, moći)	(могу, mogu)	могао/mogaо* могла/mogla	to be able to

* Note the fleeting *a* in the masculine singular between the *-к/k* or *-г/g* and the past adjectival participle ending *-о/o*, alternating with the *-л/l* in the past adjectival participle feminine and neuter singular and plural endings.

Среле су се у граду.	Srele su se u gradu.	They (<i>f, pl.</i>) met in town.
Одмах си им помогла.	Odmah si im pomogla.	You (<i>f</i>) immediately helped them.
Ја сам му рекао.	Ja sam mu rekao.	I (<i>m</i>) told him.

With *ићи/ići* and its derivatives (*доћи/doći*, *наћи/naći*, *изаћи/izaći*, *поћи/poći*, *отићи/otići*, *проћи/proći*, *ући/ući*, etc.) the present tense *-д/d* or *-ћ/đ* is replaced with *-ш/š* to which the past adjectival participle endings are added (see Section 6.17 *Ићи/ići* and its derivatives):

(ићи, ići)	(идем, idem)	ишао/išao (<i>m</i>) ишла/išla (<i>f</i>)	to go
(доћи/doći)	дођем/dođem	дошао/došao* дошла/došla	to come
(наћи/naći)	нађем/nađem	нашао/našao* нашла/našla	to find
(изаћи/izaći)	изађем/izađem	изашао/izašao* изашла/izašla	to exit
(поћи/poći)	пођем/pođem	пошао/pošao* пошла/pošla	to set off
(отићи/otići)	отиђем/otiđem	отишао/otišao* отишла/otišla	to leave
(проћи/proći)	прођем/prođem	прошао/prošao* прошла/prošla	to pass
(ући/ući)	уђем/uđem	ушао/ušao* ушла/ušla	to enter

* Note the fleeting *a* in the masculine singular between the *-ш/š* and the past adjectival participle ending *-о/o*, alternating with the *-л/l* in the past adjectival participle feminine and neuter singular and plural endings.

**Дошао сам код
бабе у посету.**

**Došao sam kod
babe u posetu.**

I (m) came to visit
my grandmother.

**Дечаци су нашли
новчаник у парку.**

**Dečaci su našli
novčanik u parku.**

The boys found a
wallet in the park.

**Ти си отишла у
школу са мојом
сестром.**

**Ti si otišla u školu
sa mojom sestrom.**

You (f) went to
school with my sister.

If there are two or more subjects and they are of different gender, the past adjectival participle ending added to the main verb will be in the masculine plural:

**Он и она су се
срели у парку.**

**On i ona su se
sreli u parku.**

He and she met in
the park.

**Драган и Наташа су
отишли на море.**

**Dragan i Nataša
su otišli na more.**

Dragan and Nataša
have gone to the coast.

6.5.2 The negative perfect tense

The negative form of the perfect tense is formed using the negative form of the verb **бити/bit**i, followed by the main verb with its active past participle ending. The negative forms are not enclitics.

Negative form of **бити/bit**i (to be)

sg.	1st p.	нисам	nisam	(I) am/have not
	2nd p.	ниси	nisi	(you) are/have not
	3rd p.	није	nije	(he/she/it) is/has not
pl.	1st p.	нисмо	nismo	(we) are/have not
	2nd p.	нисте	niste	(you) are/have not
	3rd p.	нису	nisu	(they) are/have not

**Нису ишли заједно
у биоскоп.**

**Nisu išli zajedno
u bioskop.**

They didn't go
together to the
cinema.

**Гојко није могао
да дође.**

**Gojko nije mogao
da dođe.**

Gojko couldn't come.

**Није било довољно
шећера у кафи.**

**Nije bilo dovoljno
šećera u kafi.**

There wasn't enough
sugar in the coffee.

The negative form can also be preceded by **joш/još** (still, as yet) for emphasis:

Joш им ниси помогла.	Još im nisi pomogla.	You still haven't helped them.
Ja joш ништа нисам рекао.*	Ja još ništa nisam rekao.*	I still haven't said anything.* (nothing)

* Note the double negative. (See Section 6.15 Formation of the negative.)

6.5.3 The interrogative perfect tense

In addition to using interrogative (question) words (why, how, where, when, etc.):

Зашто ниси гледао куда идеш?	Zašto nisi gledao kuda ideš?	Why didn't you look where you were going?
-------------------------------------	-------------------------------------	---

the interrogative form of the past tense is used in forming a yes/no type question when using either one of the two interrogative constructions:

- By conjugating the long form of **бити + ли/bitī + li**:

Je ли разговарала са наставником?	Je li razgovarala sa nastavnicom?	Has she spoken to the teacher?
Jesмо ли се договорили?	Jesmo li se dogovorili?	Have we agreed?
Jeste ли се поздравили?	Jeste li se pozdravili?	Did you say your goodbyes (hellos)?
Jесу ли вам дали новац за карте?	Jesu li vam dali novac za karte?	Did they give you the money for the tickets?

- By beginning the question with **да/da** followed by interrogative enclitic **ли/li** and the short form of **бити/bitī**:

Да ли си се јавила мами?	Da li si se javila mami?	Did you call your mother?
Да ли је био код лекара?	Da li je bio kod lekara?	Has he been to the doctor?
Да ли су вам дали новац за карте?	Da li su vam dali novac za karte?	Did they give you the money for the tickets?

6.5.4 The negative interrogative perfect tense

The interrogative form of the negative perfect tense is created by using the word **заp/zar** at the beginning of the sentence, followed by the

negative form of the auxiliary verb. Although neither functions as an enclitic, the word order must be followed where enclitics appear:

Зар није био код лекара?	Zar nije bio kod lekara?	<i>Has he not been to the doctor?</i>
Зар се нисмо договорили?	Zar se nismo dogovorili?	<i>Have we not agreed?</i>
Зар се нисте поздравили?	Zar se niste pozdravili?	<i>Did you not say your goodbyes (hellos)?</i>

6.6 Future tense

6.6.1 Formation of the future tense and its use

The future tense is used to express an action which is to take place some time in the future. Like the past tense, it is a compound tense, formed from two verbs: the short form of the present tense of the verb **хтети/hteti** (to want) (which then acts as an auxiliary verb and takes on the meaning 'will') and the main verb in its infinitive form. As in the past tense, the auxiliary verb is an enclitic and as such must follow the word order (see Chapter 13 Enclitics).

Present tense short form of **хтети/hteti** (to want)

sg.	1st p.	ћу	ћу	I will
	2nd p.	ћеш	ћеš	you will
	3rd p.	ће	ће	he/she/it will
pl.	1st p.	ћемо	ћемо	we will
	2nd p.	ћете	ћете	you will
	3rd p.	ће	ће	they will

Although it does not indicate gender, the auxiliary verb indicates both person and number. This will often lead to the omission of the subject, especially if it is a pronoun:

Вечерас ћу доћи у Лондон.	Večeras ću doći u London.	<i>Tonight I will come to London.</i>
Сутра ћемо звати шефа.	Sutra ćemo zvati šefa.	<i>Tomorrow we will call the boss.</i>

Мајка ће знати да си дошао. **Majka će znati da si došao.** Mother will know that you have come.

Only when at the beginning of a sentence or clause can the future tense also be formed by placing the infinitive first and annexing the auxiliary verb to it. In order to do this, the infinitive ending is replaced by the auxiliary, thus forming one word. This applies to infinitives ending in **-ти/ti**:

звати – зва + ћу	zva-ti – zva + ću	to call – I will call
знати – зна + ћу	zna-ti – zna + ću	to know – I will know
Зваћемо сестру сутра.	Zvaćemo sestru sutra.	We will call (our) sister tomorrow.
Знаће мајка да си дошао.	Znaće majka da si došao.	Mother will know that you have come.

With infinitives ending in **-сти/sti**, the **с/s** becomes **ш/š**, before the auxiliary is added to the verb:

Ја ћу јести у ресторану.	Ја ću jesti u restoranu.	I will eat in the restaurant.
Јешћу у ресторану.	Ješču u restoranu.	I will eat in the restaurant.

With infinitives ending in **-ћи/ći**, the two words remain separate and the auxiliary takes second place:

доћи	doći	to come
ићи	ići	to go
Доћи ћу у Лондон вечерас.	Doći ću u London večeras.	I will come to London tonight.
Ићи ћеш сада на спавање.	Ići ćeš sada na spavanje.	You will go to sleep now.

When sentences begin with a group of words acting as a unit and independent of the main sentence, the infinitive of the main verb will follow this unit and act as the first word in the word order. The auxiliary will either follow it as an enclitic (with verbs ending in **-ћи/ći**) or be attached to it, having replaced the infinitive ending **-ти/ti**:

У девет сати ићи ћеш на спавање.	U devet sati ići ćeš na na spavanje.	At nine o'clock you will go to sleep.
Кад прође киша, сијаће сунце.	Kad prođe kiša, sijaće sunce.	When the rain stops, the sun will shine.

The future tense can also be formed by using the auxiliary of the verb **хтети/hteti** and connecting it to the main verb in the present tense with the conjunction **да/da**:

Ја ћу да дођем у Лондон вечерас. **Ја ћу да дођем у London večeras.** *I will come to London tonight.*

Ти ћеш да идеш сада на спавање. **Ти ћеш да идеš сада на spavanje.** *You will go to sleep now.*

When this construction of the future tense is used in the affirmative, the subject, even if a pronoun, is often, though not always, included:

Он ће да дође код мене вечерас. **Он ће да дође код мене večeras.** *He will come to my place tonight.*

Вечерас ће да дође код мене. **Večeras ће да дође код мене.** *Tonight (he) will come to my place.*

6.6.2 The negative future

When a negative is formed in the future tense, the auxiliary verb **хтети/hteti** is negated:

Negative form of **хтети/hteti** (to want)

sg.	1st p.	нећу	нећу	I will not
	2nd p.	нећеш	нећеš	you will not
	3rd p.	неће	неће	he/she/it will not
pl.	1st p.	нећемо	нећемо	we will not
	2nd p.	нећете	нећете	you will not
	3rd p.	неће	неће	they will not

This negative form of the short form of **хтети/hteti** is not an enclitic and can therefore stand in first position.

When forming the negative of **хтети/hteti** (**нећу/нећу**), it is important to note that only the short form (and *never* the long form) is negated, and so **не хоћу/не хоћу** would never be used.

Ја нећу да дођем у Лондон вечерас. **Ја нећу да дођем у London večeras.** *I will not come to London tonight.*

Ти нећеш да идеш сада на спавање. **Ти нећеš да идеš сада на spavanje.** *You will not go to sleep now.*

6.6.3 The interrogative future

The interrogative future expressed with affirmative meaning can be formed in two ways.

- The first form includes the auxiliary verb and either the infinitive or the present tense of the main verb. In either case, the conjunction **да/da** followed by the interrogative enclitic **ли/li** is placed before the main verb:

Да ли ћеш ићи сада на спавање? **Da li ćeš ići sada na spavanje?** Will you go to sleep now?

Да ли ће Ана певати? **Da li će Ana pevati?** Will Anna sing?

When the main verb is in the present tense, another conjunction **да/da** precedes it:

Да ли ћеш да идеш сада на спавање? **Da li ćeš da ideš sada na spavanje?** Will you go to sleep now?

Да ли ће Ана да пева? **Da li će Ana da peva?** Will Anna sing?

- The second form of the interrogative future includes the long form of the verb **хтети/hteti** which replaces the conjunction **да/da**, and is also followed by the interrogative enclitic **ли/li** to which is added either the infinitive or the present tense of the main verb:

Хоћеш ли ићи сада на спавање? **Hoćeš li ići sada na spavanje?** Will you go to sleep now?

Хоће ли Партизан играти овог месеца? **Hoće li Partizan igrati ovog meseca?** Will Partisan play this month?

When the main verb is in the present tense, the conjunction **да/da** precedes it:

Хоћеш ли да идеш сада на спавање? **Hoćeš li da ideš sada na spavanje?** Will you go to sleep now?

Хоће ли Партизан да игра овог месеца? **Hoće li Partizan da igra ovog meseca?** Will Partisan play this month?

Since, in addition to its role as an auxiliary verb in the creation of the future tense, the verb **хтети/hteti**, when used in its long form, i.e. **хоћу/hoću, хоћеш/hoćeš**, etc., means ‘to want’:

Хоћу да идем у Лондон сутра. **Hoću da idem u London sutra.** *I want to go to London tomorrow.*

as contrasted with:

Ићи ћу у Лондон сутра. **Ići ću u London sutra.** *I will go to London tomorrow.*

this might cause confusion in the formation of the interrogative when using the long form as it might not be clear whether the question refers to a future action or to a person's willingness to perform that action. The future reference may thus be inferred more easily in the interrogative with the use of the infinitive of the main verb rather than the present tense:

Хоће ли играти наша екипа? **Hoće li igrati naša ekipa?** *Will our team play?*

Хоће ли да игра наша екипа? **Hoće li da igra naša ekipa?** *Does our team want to play?*

However, this is not always a reliable method of understanding intention and it would be best to draw the meaning from the context itself.

6.6.4 The negative interrogative future

The negative interrogative is expressed with the use of the word **зар/zar** before the auxiliary verb:

Зар нећеш ићи сада на спавање? **Zar nećeš ići sada na spavanje?** *Will you not go to sleep now?*

Зар неће да игра наша екипа овог месеца? **Zar neće da igra naša ekipa ovog meseca?** *Will our team not play this month?*

Here also, there might be some ambiguity in the meaning with regard to the future of the action or the willingness of the subject to perform it, and again the meaning should be drawn from the context.

6.7 Aorist tense

In the spoken language, this tense is generally replaced by the perfect tense (the past tense). It is still, however, in use in the written form of the language, mainly for stylistic reasons.

6.7.1 Formation of the aorist tense and its use

The aorist tense is used in the following instances:

- 1 To indicate an action or situation which was carried out or completed immediately prior to this moment in which it is described:

Ево га, стиже. **Evo ga, stiže.** Here he is, *he has arrived.*

Само што се вратисмо! **Samo što se vratismo!** We've only just *got back!*

- 2 To indicate an action or situation which occurred in the past. Though not necessarily completed, this action was terminated at a specific time in the past. It is often used in a narrative sense:

Хтедох да му платим али ми није дао. **Htedoh da mu platim ali mi nije dao.** *I wanted to pay him but he didn't let me.*

Коначно написах писмо брату. **Konačno napisah pismo bratu.** *I've finally written a letter to my brother.*

- 3 To indicate an action or situation which will be carried out in the immediate future:

Сачекај нас, одосмо по кључеве. **Sačekaj nas, odosmo po ključeve.** Wait for us, *we're off to get the keys.*

The aorist form of the verb **бити/bititi** (to be) is equivalent to the English 'would':

Aorist tense of **бити/bititi** (to be)

sg.	1st p.	(ја) бих	(ja) bih	I would
	2nd p.	(ти) би	(ti) bi	you would
	3rd p.	(он/а/о)би	(on/a/o) bi	he/she/it would
pl.	1st p.	(ми) бисмо	(mi) bismo	we would
	2nd p.	(ви) бисте	(vi) biste	you would
	3rd p.	(они) бише	(oni) biše	they would

For further use, see Section 6.9 The conditional.

As the aorist is used to express terminated and/or completed actions, it is generally formed from perfective verbs by the addition of the following endings, indicating person and number:

(a) -ти/ti infinitives				(b) -сти/sti or -ћи/ći infinitives			
sg.	1st p.	-х	-h	sg.	1st p.	-ох	-oh
	2nd p.	–	–		2nd p.	-е	-e
	3rd p.	–	–		3rd p.	-е	-e
pl.	1st p.	-смо	-smo	pl.	1st p.	-осмо	-osmo
	2nd p.	-сте	-ste		2nd p.	-осте	-oste
	3rd p.	-ше	-še		3rd p.	-оше	-oše

Endings in (a) replace the **-ти/ti** endings of the infinitives and follow the vowel:

			To take	To return	To write
Infinitive			узети	вратити	написати
			uzeti	vratiti	napisati
			үзе-ти	врати-ти	написа-ти
			uze-ti	vрати-ti	napisa-ti
sg.	1st p.	(ја)	үзех	вратих	написах
		(ja)	uzeh	vratih	napisah
	2nd p.	(ти)	үзе	врати	написа
		(ti)	uze	vрати	napisa
	3rd p.	(он/она/ оно)	үзе	врати	написа
		(on/ona/ ono)	uze	vрати	napisa
pl.	1st p.	(ми)	үзесмо	вратисмо	паписасмо
		(mi)	uzesmo	vratismo	napisasmo
	2nd p.	(ви)	үзесте	вратисте	написасте
		(vi)	uzeste	vratiste	napisaste
	3rd p.	(они/one/ она)	үзеше	вратише	паписаше
		(oni/one/ ona)	uzeše	vратиše	napisaše

Endings in (b) are added to the original stem of the infinitive (before assimilation occurred from **-ти/ti** to **-ћи/ći** as well as to **-сти/sti** endings). These endings follow the consonant:

		To be able to	To say/tell	To leave	To scratch	
Infinitive		моћи	рећи	поћи	загребсти	
		моći	реći	поći	zagrepsti	
		мог-ти	рек-ти	по-ид-ти	загреб-ти	
		mog-ti	rek-ti	po-id-ti	zagreb-ti	
sg.	1st p.	(ја)	могох	рекох	пођох	загребох
		(ја)	mogoħ	rekoħ	pođoħ	zagreboħ
	2nd p.	(ти)	може	рече	пође	загребе
		(ти)	može	reče	pođe	zagrebe
	3rd p.	(он/она/ оно)	може	рече	пође	загребе
		(on/ona/ ono)	može	reče	pođe	zagrebe
pl.	1st p.	(ми)	могосмо	рекосмо	пођосмо	загребосмо
		(mi)	mogosmo	rekosmo	pođosmo	zagrebosmo
	2nd p.	(ви)	могосте	рекосте	пођосте	загребосте
		(vi)	mogoste	rekoste	pođoste	zagreboste
	3rd p.	(они/one/ она)	могоше	рекоше	пођоше	загребоше
		(oni/one/ ona)	mogoše	rekoše	pođoše	zagreboše

In the 2nd and 3rd person singular, sound changes occur in some of the verbs before the ending -e:

-к/k changes to **-ч/č**

-г/g changes to **-ж/ž**

-х/h changes to **-ш/š**

A few verbs, although ending in **-ти/ti**, have dual aorist forms, with and without an added **д/d**:

Хтедоше лопови да нас опљачкају док смо спавали.	Htedošē lopovi ḑa nas opljačkaju dok smo spavali.	The thieves wanted to rob us while we were sleeping.
Одмах знадох о чему се ради.	Odmaḥ znadoḥ о čemu se radi.	I knew immediately what it was about.
Рекоше нам да се пазимо.	Rekoše nam da se pazimo.	They told us to take care.

6.7.2 The negative aorist

The negative particle **-не/не** is placed before the verb in the aorist.

Ја не одох у Лондон ове године.	Ја не одох у London ove godine.	I have not gone to London this year.
Ти не рече кад се враћаш.	Ти не рече кад se vraćaš.	You have not said when you will be back.
Не могосмо да им помогнемо.	Не могосмо da im pomognem.	We were not able to help them.

6.7.3 The interrogative aorist

The interrogative aorist expressed in an affirmative meaning can be formed in two ways:

- 1 With the use of conjunction **да/da** followed by the interrogative enclitic **ли/li** and the verb in the aorist tense:

Да ли хтедосте да останете на вечеру?	Da li htedoste da ostanete na večeru?	Did you want to stay for dinner?
--	--	-------------------------------------

- 2 With the interrogative enclitic **ли/li** preceded by the verb in the aorist tense:

Хтедосте ли да останете на вечеру?	Htedoste li da ostanete na večeru?	Did you want to stay for dinner?
---	---	-------------------------------------

Пођосте ли у биоскоп синоћ?	Pođoste li u bioskop sinoć?	Did you go to the cinema last night?
--	--	--

6.7.4 The negative interrogative aorist

The negative interrogative can also be formed in two ways:

- 1 With the use of **зар/zar** followed by the the negative particle and the verb in the aorist tense:

Зар не хтедосте да останете на вечеру?	Zar ne htedoste da останете на веџеру?	<i>Did you not want to stay for dinner?</i>
---	---	---

- 2 With the use of the interrogative enclitic **ли/li** preceded by the negative particle and the verb in the aorist tense:

Не хтедосте ли да останете на вечеру?	Ne htedoste li da останете на веџеру?	<i>Did you not want to stay for dinner?</i>
--	--	---

6.8 Future II

6.8.1 Uses of future II

Also referred to as the future exact, this tense is mainly used to express an action which may take place before or simultaneously with another action in the future:

Деца ће те волети ако им будеш доносио колаче.	Deca će te voleti ako im budeš donosio kolače.	<i>The children will love you if you keep bringing them cakes.</i>
---	---	--

This tense is usually introduced by one of the following conjunctions expressing time or condition: **кад/kad** (when), **ако/ako** (if), **док/dok** (until), **пошто/pošto** (after), **чим/čim** (as soon as), **да/da** (to be).

Јави се чим будеш стигао.	Javi se čim budeš stigao.	<i>Call as soon as you arrive.</i>
----------------------------------	----------------------------------	------------------------------------

The present tense of a perfective verb only can replace the future II when these conjunctions are used:

Јави се чим стигнеш.	Javi se čim stigneš.	<i>Call as soon as you arrive.</i>
-----------------------------	-----------------------------	------------------------------------

Деца ће те волети ако им донесеш колаче.	Deca će te voleti ako im doneseš kolače.	<i>The children will love you if you bring them cakes.</i>
---	---	--

The future II can also be used to express an action which has taken place in the past, expressing the historical present of a verb used in the passive. The verb in this instance has a passive participle ending and there are no conjunctions introducing the tense:

Крајем те године, он буде постављен за председника државе.	Krajem te godine, on bude postavljen za predsednika države.	At the end of that year, he was <i>appointed</i> as president of the country.
---	--	---

6.8.2 Formation of the future II

This tense is formed using the present perfect of **бити/biti** (see Section 6.16 Present perfect of **бити/biti**) as an auxiliary, and the main verb with a past participle ending:

Future II of **писати/pisati** (to write)

sg.	1st p.	будем писао	budem pisao
	2nd p.	будеш писао	budeš pisao
	3rd p.m	буде писао	bude pisao
	f	буде писала	bude pisala
	n	буде писало	bude pisalo
pl.	1st p.	будемо писали	budemo pisali
	2nd p.	будете писали	budete pisali
	3rd p.m	буду писали	буду pisali
	f	буду писале	буду pisale
	n	буду писала	буду pisala

6.9 The conditional

6.9.1 Uses of the conditional

The conditional is used when expressing an action which is dependent upon another action taking place. That which is expressed in the main clause depends – is conditional – on that which is expressed in the subordinate (if) clause.

6.9.2 Formation of the conditional

Conditional sentences consist of two clauses:

- 1 A main clause, containing a main verb with either:
 - the auxiliary short form of the future tense of **хтети/hteti** (will) (see Section 6.6 Future tense):
Ја ћу певати. Ја ћу певати. I will sing.
 - or
 - the auxiliary short form of the aorist tense of **бити/biti** (would) (see Section 6.7 Aorist tense):
Ја бих певала. Ја бих певала. I would sing.
- 2 A subordinate clause containing a main verb and beginning with:
 - **ако/ako** (if)
 - **кад(а)/kad(a)** (were/should)and
 - the present perfect form of **бити/biti** (see Section 6.16 Present perfect of **бити/biti**):
Ако будеш дошао Ако будеш дошао If you come
 - or
 - the aorist tense form of **бити/biti**:
Кад би дошао Кад би дошао Should you come
 - or
 - **да/da** (have had), followed by a verb in the past, present or future, with or without an auxiliary:
Ја бих певала Ја бих певала I would have
да си дошао. да си дошао. sung had you
come.

The sentence can begin either with the main clause, in which case the clauses are not separated by a comma, or the subordinate clause, which would be followed by a comma:

Ја ћу певати ако будеш дошао.	Ја ћу певати ако будеш дошао.	<i>I will sing if you come.</i>
Ако будеш дошао, ја ћу певати.	Ако будеш дошао, ја ћу певати.	<i>If you come, I will sing.</i>
Ја бих певала кад би дошао.	Ја бих певала кад би дошао.	<i>I would sing should you come.</i>
Кад би дошао, ја бих певала.	Кад би дошао, ја бих певала.	<i>Should you come, I would sing.</i>

There are three types of conditionals in Serbian.

Type 1 – the realisable conditional

Type 1 conditional sentences refer to an action or situation in the future which, dependent on the fulfilment of the condition, is realisable. This type of conditional sentence has four forms, in all of which the verb in the main clause is in the future tense. In the first two forms, the subordinate clause begins with **ако/ako** (if), in the third with **уколико/ukoliko**, and in the fourth form, the particle **ли/li** as a second position enclitic is introduced.

- 1 In the first form, the verb in the subordinate clause is in the present tense:

Ако дођеш, добићеш поклон.	Ако dođeš, dobićeš poklon.	<i>If you come, you will</i> <i>get a present.</i>
---	---	---

- 2 In the second form, the verb in the subordinate clause has the present perfect form of **бити/biti** (see Section 6.8 Future II) as an auxiliary to the verb with a past participle ending (see Section 6.5 Past tense):

Ако будеш дошао, добићеш поклон.	Ако budeš došao, dobićeš poklon.	<i>If you come, you'll</i> <i>get a present.</i>
---	---	---

- 3 In the third form, the subordinate clause begins with **уколико/ukoliko**, and the verb in it is in the present or future II:

Уколико стигнеш на време, добићеш поклон.	Ukoliko stigneš na vreme, dobićeš poklon.	<i>If you arrive on</i> <i>time, you will get a</i> <i>present.</i>
--	--	---

Уколико будеш стигао на време, добићеш поклон.	Ukoliko budeš stigaо na vreme, dobićeš poklon.
---	---

- 4 In the fourth form, the particle **ли/li** follows the the verb in the present or future II in the subordinate clause, thus replacing **ако/ako**:

Стигнеш ли на време, добићеш поклон.	Stigneš li na vreme, dobićeš poklon.	<i>If you arrive on</i> <i>time, you will get a</i> <i>present.</i>
---	---	---

Будеш ли стигао на време, добићеш поклон.	Budeš li stigaо na vreme, dobićeš poklon.
--	--

Type 2 – the potentially realisable conditional

In Type 2 conditional sentences, although realisable, the action or final outcome is weakened, where **када/kada** (were/should) as well as **ако/ako** (if) are used, implying ‘by any chance’. In this type of conditional, the speaker is expressing a desire for something to happen, and not necessarily a belief that it will happen. The subordinate clause begins with **када/kada** or **ако/ako** and the verb in both the subordinate and the main clause has a past participle ending, as well as the auxiliary form of the verb **бити/bititi** in the aorist tense:

**Када би дошао,
добило би поклон.**

**Kada bi došao,
dobio bi poklon.**

*Were (should) you
to come, you would
get a present.*

**Ако би се потукли,
нико не би победио.**

**Ako bi se potukli,
niko ne bi pobedio.**

*Were they to
have a fight,
neither would win.*

**Кад би знао колико
га воли, био би
пресећан.**

**Kad bi znao koliko
ga voli, bio bi
presrećan.**

*Were he to know
how much she
loved him, he'd be
very happy.*

**Ако бисте дошли,
ишли бисмо у
биоскоп.**

**Ako biste došli,
išli bismo u
bioskop.**

*If you were to
come, we would go
to the cinema.*

Type 3 – the unrealisable conditional

This conditional is used when speaking about past events, speculating on how the action or situation would have turned out had the condition been fulfilled, thus implying that it had not been fulfilled. It can be used to express reproach or regret. In this type of conditional, the subordinate clause begins with **да/da** (have had). The verb in the subordinate clause is generally in the past tense, while the verb in the main clause has a past participle ending and the auxiliary form of the verb **бити/bititi**:

**Да си знао, добио
би поклон.**

**Da si znao, dobio
bi poklon.**

*Had you known,
you would have got
a present.*

**Да сте дошли,
отишли бисмо
у биоскоп.**

**Da ste došli, otišli
bismo u bioskop.**

*Had you come, we
would have gone to
the movies.*

The aorist of the verb **бити/bititi** acts as an auxiliary verb in constructing some forms of the conditional:

Aorist of **бити/biti** (to be)

sg.	1st p.	(ја) бих	(ja) bih	I would
	2nd p.	(ти) би	(ti) bi	you would
	3rd p.	(он/а/о) би	(on/a/o) bi	he/she/it would
pl.	1st p.	(ми) бисмо	(mi) bismo	we would
	2nd p.	(ви) бисте	(vi) biste	you would
	3rd p.	(они) бише*	(oni) biše*	they would

* Third person plural in the conditional is **-би/bi**.

On its own, it is equivalent to the English ‘would’ and can also be used with other verbs and conjunctions to indicate the following:

- 1 A readiness or willingness to do something:

Да ли бисте ми помогли? **Da li biste mi pomogli?** *Would you help me, please?*

Свако би хтео парче. **Svako bi hteo parče.** *Everyone would want a piece.*

- 2 To express habitual action:

Жене би остајале код куће. **Žene bi ostajale kod kuće.** *The women would stay at home.*

Деца би се играла у дворишту. **Deca bi se igrala u dvorištu.** *The children would play in the yard.*

- 3 In polite expressions (**желети/želeti** (to desire), **хтети/hteti** (to want), **волети/voleti** (to like)):

Желео бих чашу воде, молим вас. **Želeo bih čašu vode, molim vas.** *I would like a glass of water, please.*

Хтели бисмо да резервишемо собу. **Hteli bismo da rezervišemo sobu.** *We would like to book a room.*

- 4 In expressions of should and ought (**требати/trebat**):

Требало би да кренемо. **Trebalo bi da krenemo.** *We should (ought) to go (set off).*

Not **требали би да кренемо/trebal** *bi da krenemo.*

Требало би да се упишете. **Trebalo bi da se upišete.** *You should (ought to) sign in.*

Not **требали би да се упишете/trebali bi da se upišete.**

- 5 As a reason for an action (with conjunction **да/da**) – ‘in order to/for’:

Она ће све урадити да би њен син био срећан. **Ona će sve uraditi da bi njen sin bio srećan.** *She will do anything in order for her son to be happy.*

Отишао је да би је заборавио. **Otišao je da bi je zaboravio.** *He left in order to forget her.*

- 6 To indicate ‘could’ (**моћи/моћи**):

Могла би јој рећи. **Mogla bi joj reći.** *You could tell her.*

Могли бисте да се окупате. **Mogli biste da se okupate.** *You (pl.) could take a bath.*

When forming a question, the aorist of **бити/bit**i can be preceded by **да ли/da li**:

Да ли бисте дошли? Da li biste došli? *Would you come?*

Or it can be followed by the interrogative enclitic **ли/li**:

Бисте ли дошли? Biste li došli? *Would you come?*

It can also be preceded by the emphatic **зар/zar** in first position when asking a question:

Зар бисте дошли? Zar biste došli? *Would you really come?*

Or by the negative particle **не/ne**:

Не бисте ли дошли? Ne biste li došli? *Would you not come?*

6.10 Imperative

The imperative is a form of the verb used to give orders, to make suggestions, to give advice or to invite.

6.10.1 Use of the imperative

The imperative form is used in four different situations:

- 1 When the speaker gives a command to the listener. In this instance, ‘you’ (sg.) or ‘you’ (pl.) is implied:

Донеси ми чашу воде, молим те. *Donesi mi čašu vode, molim te.* Please (you) bring me a glass of water.

This form can be negated with **не/ne** placed before the verb, which is usually an imperfective:

Не доноси ми чашу воде, молим те. *Ne donosi mi čašu vode, molim te.* Please (you) do not bring me a glass of water.

- 2 When the speaker gives a command to him or herself plus one or more listeners, the English equivalent of ‘let us . . .’ is implied:

Прошетајмо пса. *Prošetajmo psa.* Let’s walk the dog.

Хајдемо по чашу воде. *Hajdemo po čašu vode.* Let’s get a glass of water.

This type of imperative cannot be negated.

- 3 **Нека/нека** (let) is used when a command or permission is being given to a third person:

Нека ми донесе чашу воде. *Neka mi donese čašu vode.* Let him bring me a glass of water.

Нека га послушају! *Neka ga poslušaju!* Let them listen to him!

This type can be negated, usually with an imperfective verb:

Нека ми не доноси чашу воде. *Neka mi ne donosi čašu vode.* Let him not bring me a glass of water.

- 4 When a command or advice is given ‘not to do something’.

Немој да плачеш! *Nemoj da plačesh!* Don’t cry! (you, sg.)

Немојте да га будите! *Nemojte da ga budite!* Don’t wake him up! (you, pl.)

6.10.2 Formation of the imperative

- 1 In the 2nd person singular and plural, the imperative is formed by dropping the final vowel (-y/u or -e/e) of the 3rd person plural of the present tense and adding the imperative ending.

The imperative ending can be one of two types, depending on the 3rd person plural present tense ending.

- (a) If the final vowel is preceded by the consonant -j/j:

Они певају. *Oni pevaju.* They are singing.

the following applies:

- i The final vowel is dropped for the 2nd person imperative singular:

Певај! **Pevaj!** Sing! (you)

- ii For the 2nd person imperative plural **-те/те** is added to the 2nd person singular:

Певајте! **Pevajte!** Sing! (you, pl.)

- (b) If the 3rd person plural ending is **-е/е** or **-у/у**:

Они раде. **Oni rade.** They are working.

the following applies:

- i The final vowel is dropped for the 2nd person imperative singular and replaced by **-и/и**:

Ради! **Radi!** Work! (you)

- ii For the 2nd person plural **-те/те** is added to the 2nd person singular:

Радите! **Radite!** Work! (you, pl.)

- 2 When the 1st person plural is implied, the imperative ending **-мо/мо** is added to the 2nd person singular imperative form:

2nd sg. **Ради!** **Radi!** Work! (you)

1st pl. **Радино!** **Radimo!** Let's work!

- 3 When a command is being given to a third person, the conjunction **нека/нека** is used along with the 3rd person (singular or plural) form of the present tense:

3rd p.sg. **Он ради.** **On radi.** He is working.

Pres.
imperative

Нека ради! **Neka radi!** Let him work.

- 4 When expressing a negative imperative using the **немој/немој** (do not) form, the following applies:

- i The form **немој/немој** (do not) is used for the 2nd person singular:

Немој да излазиш **Nemoj da izlaziš** Don't go out
касно! **kasno!** late!

- ii The form **немојте/nemojte** is used for the 2nd person plural:

	Немојте да излазите касно!	Nemojte da izlazite kasno!	<i>Don't go out late!</i>
iii	The form немојмо/немојмо is used for the 1st person plural:		
	Немојмо да излазимо касно!	Nemoјmo da izlazimo kasno!	<i>Don't let us go out late!</i>

6.11 Reflexive verbs

Reflexive verbs are used with the reflexive pronoun **се/се** (see Section 8.2 Reflexive pronouns), the short form of the pronoun **себе/себе**. This pronoun is an enclitic and must follow the enclitic word order whenever and wherever it is used (see Section 13.1 Order and importance of enclitics).

Verbs containing the reflexive pronoun **се/се** can be divided into four groups:

- 1 Transitive verbs (verbs that take the accusative case and cannot stand on their own but must have a direct object):

Мајко је купала дете. Мајка је купала Mother *bathed*
дете. **dete.** the child.

can be followed by **се/се** instead of the direct object:

Мајка се купала. Мајка се купала. Mother had a bath
себе. **себе.** (*bathed herself*).

Мајка је купала себе. Мајка је купала Mother *bathed* herself.
себе. **себе.**

With this use, although the doer is the subject of the sentence, through the use of the reflexive pronoun **се/се** (or its long form **себе/себе** which is used only in this group), he/she also becomes the object of the action.

- 2 When two or more subjects have a reciprocal relationship expressed in English with 'each other' or 'one another', the two can be expressed as the subject while the reflexive pronoun **се/се** denotes a relationship of reciprocity:

Милорад и Лјубица се љубе. Милорад и Лјубица Milorad and Ljubica
се љубе. **се љубе.** are *kissing* (each
other).

Воleti се значи поштовати се. Voleti се значи To *love one another*
поштовати се. **poštovati se.** means to *respect each*
other.

- 3 The short form of the reflexive pronoun **се/се** is also used to form a passive, impersonal voice from an active verb when the subject of the sentence is in the 3rd person singular or plural, or is not known (see Section 6.12 Impersonal verbs):

Зна се да иде у 5 сати.	Zna se da ide u 5 sati.	(It) is known that he/she is going at 5 o'clock.
--------------------------------	--------------------------------	--

This passive form is also used when indicating that something is done regularly (in which case an imperfective verb is used):

Заливање баште се обавља сваког јутра.	Zalivanje bašte se obavlja svakog jutra.	Watering of the garden is done every morning.
---	---	---

- 4 Some verbs are reflexive although their meaning indicates neither passivity nor reflexivity:

бојати се	bojati se	to be afraid, scared
плашити се	plašiti se	to be afraid, scared
борити се	boriti se	to struggle, fight
радовати се	radovati se	to be happy, look forward to something
догодити се	dogoditi se	to happen, occur
десити се	desiti se	to happen, occur
надати се	nadati se	to hope
смејати се	smejati se	to laugh
чудити се	čuditi se	to wonder
коцкати се	kockati se	to gamble

6.12 Impersonal verbs

When a statement is being made in which the subject is not present or known, the verb is said to be impersonal. In English this is reflected with the use of ‘One says . . .’, ‘One thinks . . .’, ‘People feel . . .’, ‘It is said . . .’, ‘It is thought . . .’, ‘It is believed . . .’, etc.

In Serbian, this impersonal meaning is expressed by either:

- Using the 3rd person neuter singular of a verb to which the reflexive pronoun **се/се** is added (if the verb does not already carry it). The pronoun ‘it’ (neuter singular) is implied:

Говори се да ме више не волиш.	Govori se da me više ne voliš.	<i>It is said (people say) that you don't love me any more.</i>
Верује се да се убица крије у селу.	Veruje se da se ubica krije u selu.	<i>It is believed that the killer is hiding (himself) in the village.</i>
Улази се у зграду кроз главна врата.	Ulazi se u zgradu kroz glavna vrata.	<i>One enters the building through the main door.</i>

A verb in the past tense, followed by the reflexive **се/се**, is also used to indicate an impersonal meaning:

Плесало се и пило се на забави.	Plesalo se i pilo se na zabavi.	<i>There was dancing and drinking at the party.</i>
--	--	---

- 2 The impersonal meaning is also conveyed with the verb **бити/бити** (to be) in any tense in the 3rd person singular and an adverb (with the neuter singular pronoun 'it' implied). This is added to the logical subject in the dative case (see Section 7.3.3 Dative case). The reflexive **се/се** does not occur in this form:

Жао ми је што га нисте видели.	Žao mi je što ga niste videli.	<i>I'm sorry that you did not see him. (it is sorry to me)</i>
Било ми је жао што га нисте видели.	Bilo mi je žao što ga niste videli.	<i>I was sorry that you hadn't seen him.</i>
Биће ми жао што га нећете видети.	Biće mi žao što ga nećete videti.	<i>I will be sorry that you won't see him.</i>
Драго ми је да сте дошли.	Drago mi je da ste došli.	<i>I'm glad that you came. (it is gladdening to me)</i>

6.13 Auxiliary verbs

The auxiliary verbs used for forming various tenses are the short forms of the verbs **бити/бити** (to be) and **хтети/hteti** (to want). All auxiliary verbs are enclitics (see Chapter 13 Enclitics) and must follow the enclitic word order. They indicate person and number, while the main verb they accompany will, depending on the tense, generally only express number.

- 1 The past tense (see Section 6.5 Past tense) is formed using the short form of **бити/бити** as an auxiliary to the main verb which has a past participle ending:

Ja sam gledala taj филм. **Ja sam gledala taj film.** I saw that film.

- 2 The future tense (see Section 6.6 Future tense) is formed using the short form of **хтети/hteti** as an auxiliary to the main verb, which is given in the infinitive:

Ja ћу гледати тај филм. **Ja ću gledati taj film.** I will see that film.

or, by using it with the present tense of the main verb and the conjunction **да/da**:

Ja ћу да гледам тај филм. **Ja ću da gledam taj film.** I will see that film.

- 3 The future II (see Section 6.8 Future II) is formed using the present perfective aspect form of **бити/bitī** as an auxiliary to the main verb which has a past participle ending:

Једног дана, када будем живео на југу Француске **Jednog dana, kada budem živeo na jugu Francuske** One day (in the future), when I'm living in the South of France

- 4 Certain forms of the conditional (see Section 6.9 The conditional) are formed using the aorist (see Section 6.7 Aorist tense) of **бити/bitī** as an auxiliary to the main verb which has a past participle ending:

Кад бих гледала тај филм, рекла бих ти. **Kad bih gledala taj film, rekla bih ti.** If I were to see that film, I would tell you.

In forming the negative of any of these tenses, the negative marker will be applied to the auxiliary verb and not to the main verb:

нисам гледала **nisam gledala** I did not see
нећу гледати **neću gledati** I will not see
не будем гледала **ne budem gledala** I will not see
не бих гледала **ne bih gledala** I would not see

6.14 Formation of the interrogative

There are several ways in which a question may be asked. Question forms to which a 'yes/no' reply is expected are given under (a), (c), (d) and (e), while question forms using question-words are given under (b).

- (a) In everyday conversation, raised intonation at the end of the sentence may be sufficient:

Из Београда сте? Iz Beograda ste? You're from Belgrade?

- (b) An interrogative word may be placed at the beginning of a sentence, followed by the verb:

Где идеш?	Gde ideš?	Where are you going?
Шта куваш?	Šta kuvaš?	What are you cooking?
Зашто журите?	Zašto žurite?	Why are you hurrying?
Ко долази?	Ko dolazi?	Who is coming?

- (c) When an interrogative word is not used, then the interrogative particle **ли/li** must be used. In the present tense, it will take second position in the sentence and will be preceded by the verb:

Идеш ли?	Ideš li?	Are are you going?
Куваш ли?	Kuvaš li?	Are you cooking?
Журите ли?	Žurite li?	Are you hurrying?

- (d) The particle **ли/li** may also be preceded by the conjunction **да/da**, followed (perhaps much later) by the verb:

Да ли стварно тамо идеш?	Da li stvarno тамо ideš?	Are you really going there?
Да ли журите?	Da li žurite?	Are you hurrying?
Да ли је ово банка?	Da li je ovo banka?	Is this the bank?

- (e) In the present tense, the particle **ли/li** may be preceded by the verbal **је/je** (3rd person singular of the verb **бити/bititi** (to be)), followed by the verb:

Је ли идеш?	Je li ideš?	Are you going?
Је ли журите?	Je li žurite?	Are you hurrying?
Је ли је ово банка?	Je li je ovo banka?	Is this the bank?

Note: With this use, the verbal **је/je** is not an enclitic.

- (f) Negative questions are formed by introducing the conjunction **зар/zar** followed by the negative form of the verb:

Зар не идеш?	Zar ne ideš?	Are you <i>not</i> going?
Зар не журите?	Zar ne žurite?	Are you <i>not</i> hurrying?
Зар није ово банка?	Zar nije ovo banka?	Is this <i>not</i> the bank?

When used at the end of a sentence, **зар не/zar ne** invites confirmation or negation of what is stated:

Идеш, зар не?	Ideš, zar ne?	You are going, <i>aren't you?</i>
Жүрите, зар не?	Žurite, zar ne?	You are hurrying, <i>aren't you?</i>
Ово је банка, зар не?	Ovo je banka, zar ne?	This is the bank, <i>isn't it?</i>

- (g) As does the conjunction **да/da** followed by the present tense. This form is used more as a suggestion or an offer:

Да идем?	Da idem?	<i>Shall I go?</i>
Да пожури́м?	Da požurim?	<i>Shall I hurry up?</i>
Да дође́м?	Da dođem?	<i>Shall I come?</i>

- (h) **Зар/zar** is also used as an emphatic or to express surprise, often expressed in English by 'really':

Зар идеш?	Zar ideš?	<i>Are you really going?</i>
Зар жүрите?	Zar žurite?	<i>Are you really hurrying?</i>
Зар је ово банка?	Zar je ovo banka?	<i>Is this really the bank?</i>

- (i) The particle **ли/li** is also used following modal verbs (see Section 16.18 Modal verbs) and itself is followed by the conjunction **да/da**:

Могу ли да идем?	Mogu li da idem?	<i>Can I go?</i>
Треба ли да им кувам?	Treba li da im kuvam?	<i>Ought I to cook for them?</i>
Смем ли да дође́м?	Smem li da dođem?	<i>May I come?</i>

For interrogatives in the various tenses, see under each separate tense.

6.15 Formation of the negative

Negation is expressed by using the negative particle **не/ne**, which can be used independently or as a prefix.

Independently, the negative particle **не/ne** can be used in two ways:

- 1 To mean 'no', in which case it is generally accented:

Идете ли у биоскоп вечерас?	Idete li u bioskop večeras?	Are you going to the cinema tonight?
Не, не идемо.	Ne, ne idemo.	No, we are not.

2 To mean negation:

- with all verbs, excluding **бити/biti** (to be), when inserted before the verb in the present tense and the aorist. Although written separately, the two words are pronounced as one:

Не знам колико је сати. **Ne znam koliko je sati.** *I don't know the time.*

Не жели да разговара. **Ne želi da razgovara.** *(He/she) doesn't wish to talk.*

Не пољубисмо се до јуче. **Ne poljubismo se do juče.** *We hadn't kissed until yesterday.*

- with the verb **бити/biti** (to be) in the aorist when used as an auxiliary to mean the equivalent of the English 'would' or in forming the conditional:

Не бих знала колико је сати. **Ne bih znala koliko je sati.** *I wouldn't know the time.*

He/ne can also be used as a word prefix, when it is generally accented:

1 It can be prefixed to nouns, adjectives or adverbs:

неспоразум **neporazum** misunderstanding

немогућност **nemogućnost** impossibility

нељубазан **neljubazan** impolite

незабораван **nezaboravan** unforgetful

2 And only with the verbs **бити/biti**, **хтети/hteti** (to want) and **имати/imati** (to have):

- with **бити/biti** (to be) in the present tense and when used as an auxiliary in forming the past tense, where it becomes **ни/ni** and is prefixed to the short form of **бити/biti**. The accent falls on the prefixed negative and the form is no longer an enclitic:

Нисам знала колико је сати. **Nisam znala koliko je sati.** *I didn't know the time.*

Није желео да разговара. **Nije želeo da razgovara.** *(He/she) didn't wish to talk.*

- with **хтети/hteti** (to want) in the present tense and when used as an auxiliary in forming the future tense. **He/ne** is prefixed to the short form of the verb which is no longer an enclitic, as the **не/ne** carries the stress:

Нећу знати колико је сати. **Neću znati koliko je sati.** *I won't know the time.*

Неће да разговара. **Neće da razgovara.** *(He/she) does not want to talk.*

- when the verb **имати/imati** (to have) is negated, **не/не** is prefixed to the verb and replaces the initial **-и/i**. The accent falls on the prefixed negative.

Немам кључ. **Nemam ključ.** *I don't have the key.*

Немају кола. **Nemaju kola.** *They don't have a car.*

Negation of **имати/imati** occurs only in the present tense. In all other tenses, the auxiliary verb is negated while the original form of **имати/imati** remains and acts as a main verb in accordance with the tense formation:

Нисам имала кључ. **Nisam imala ključ.** *I didn't have the key.*

Неће имати кола. **Neće imati kola.** *They won't have a car.*

As **имати/imati** can mean 'the existence of' something, **немати/nemati** can also mean 'the non-existence of' something. It can only have this meaning when used in the present tense:

У пекари нема млека. **U pekari nema mleka.** *There is no milk in the bakery.*

When the past or future of this meaning is expressed, the verb **бити/bititi** replaces **имати/imati**, or its negation, and the negation is formed by prefixing the auxiliary verb of the required tense:

Неће бити млека у пекари. **Neće biti mleka u pekari.** *There will be no milk in the bakery.*

Није било млека у пекари. **Nije bilo mleka u pekari.** *There was no milk in the bakery.*

The present tense **нема/нема** (there is not), the future tense **неће бити/неће бити** (there will not be) and past tense **није било/није било** (there was no) call for the genitive case.

Intensified negation

The negative particle **ни/ни** is often used to emphasise and intensify the meaning of the word immediately following it:

Није нас ни сачекао. **Nije nas ni sačekaо.** *He didn't even wait for us.*

Нећемо их ни погледати. **Nećemo ih ni pogledati.** We won't even look at them.

Нисам му ни реч рекао. **Nisam mu ni reč rekao.** I didn't say a single word to him.

where the following would be equally correct, but not as intensified:

Није нас сачекао. **Nije nas sačekaо.** He didn't wait for us.

Нећемо их погледати. **Nećemo ih pogledati.** We won't look at them.

Нисам му реч рекао. **Nisam mu reč rekao.** I didn't say a word to him.

Although **ни/ni** need not ordinarily be included in negating a sentence, if one or more negative pronouns/adverbs are in a sentence, the verb has to be negated with **не/ne** (with **ни/ni**- if there is an auxiliary **сам/sam**, **си/si**, **је/je**, **смо/smo**, **сте/ste**, **су/su**). If there is a **ни/ni** of intensified negation, the verb of the sentence also has to be negated.

Нико нас не чека. **Niko nas ne чека.** No-one is waiting for us.

Никоме ништа не говорим. **Nikome niшта ne говорим.** I don't say anything to anyone.

Нико их неће погледати. **Niko ih neće pogledati.** No-one will look at them.

Нико нас није ни позвао. **Niko nas nije ni pozвао.** No-one even called us.

This is often referred to as the 'double negative rule'.

The true double negative

Unlike the preceding 'double negative rule', the true double negative involves the use of two negatives which equate to an affirmative:

Нећу да не спавам. **Neću da ne спавам.** I don't want to not sleep.

Не жели да не зна. **Ne želi da ne зна.** He/she doesn't want to not know.

Нема особе која није купила тај производ. **Nema osobe koja nije kupila taj proizvod.** There isn't a person who hasn't bought that product.

6.16 Present perfective aspect of бити/bití

The verb **бити/bití** (to be) has two present tense forms. One has been already covered in the present tense (Section 6.4), and the other is the present of the perfective aspect of this verb:

Present of the perfective aspect of бити/bití (to be)		
	Singular	Plural
1st p.	бүдем/budem	бүдемо/budemo
2nd p.	бүдеш/budeš	бүдете/budete
3rd p.	бүде/bude	бүдү/budu

This form of **бити/bití** is used in constructing the future II (see Section 6.8 Future II) in a subordinate clause, when an action is conceived as being completed at a precise time in the future. The conjunctions **кад/kad** (when) and **ако/ako** (if) when referring to an action taking place in the future would always be followed by this form of **бити/bití** rather than the short form of **хтети/hteti** used as an auxiliary in forming the regular future (see Section 6.6 Future tense):

Ако бүде падала **Ako bude padala** *If it rains, we'll stay*
киша, остаћемо **kiša, ostaćemo** *at home.*
код куће. **kod kuće.**

Кад бүдеш завршио **Kad budeš završio** *When you finish your*
домаћи, купићу **domaći, kupiću** *homework, I'll buy*
ти сладолед. **ti sladoled.** *you an ice-cream.*

This form is also found with **да/da** + present tense:

Треба да бүдемо **Treba da budemo** *We should be happy*
задовољни с **zadovoljni s onim** *with what we've got.*
оним што имамо. **što imamo.**

6.17 Ићилиќи and its derivatives

The verb **ићи/ići** (to go) has an irregular present tense and an irregular past tense.

In the present tense, **-ћи/ići** is replaced by **-д/d** to which the present tense endings are added:

The present tense of **ићи/ићи** (to go)

	Singular	Plural
1st p.	идем idem	идемо idemo
2nd p.	идеш ideš	идете idete
3rd p.	иде ide	иду idu

Наша деца воле да иду у школу. **Naša deca vole da idu u školu.** Our children like going to school.

Не идем на посао у понедељак. **Ne idem na posao u ponedeljak.** I'm not going to work on Monday.

In the past tense, the **-ћи/ћи** is replaced by **-ш/š** to which the past participle endings **-о/о**, **-ла/la**, **-ло/lo**, **-ли/li**, **-ле/le**, **-ла/la** are added:

The past tense of **ићи/ићи** (to go)

	Singular			Plural		
	Masculine	Feminine	Neuter	Masculine	Feminine	Neuter
1st p.	ишао	ишла	ишло	ишли	ишле	ишла
2nd p.	ишао	ишла	ишло	ишли	ишле	ишла

Ишли смо заједно у школу. **Išli smo zajedno u školu.** We went to school together.

Зашто си ишао тамо? **Zašto si išao tamo?** Why did you go there?

Verbs derived from **ићи/ићи**, many of which have prefixes added to the basic form, with or without the initial **и/и**, behave in a similar manner

in the present tense. With these verbs the **-ћи/ći** ending is generally replaced by **-ћ/đ** rather than **-д/d**, to be followed by the present tense endings. The past tense endings remain the same as for **ићи/ići**:

Infinitive			Present tense	Past tense
			1st p.	Masculine
доћи	doći	to come, to go up to	доћем dođem	дошао došao
отићи	otići	to leave, to go from	одем/отидем odem/otidem	отишао otišao
поћи	poći	to set off, to go off	поћем pođem	пошао pošao
проћи	proći	to pass by, to pass through	проћем prođem	прошао prošao
прићи	prići	to come towards	прићем priđem	пришао prišao
наћи	naći	to find	наћем nađem	нашао našao
наићи	naići	to come upon	наићем naiđem	наишао naišao
обићи	obići	to go around, to tour	обићем obiđem	обишао obišao
заћи	zaći	to go behind	заћем zađem	зашао zašao
ући	ući	to come into, to go into, to enter	ућем uđem	ушао ušao
изаћи	izaći	to come out of, to go out of, to exit	изаћем izađem	изашао izašao

6.18 Modal verbs

Modal verbs (can, may, should, need to, ought to, have to, be able to), express an attitude, judgement, interpretation or feeling, and are usually linked to another verb with the conjunction **да/da** (that/to).

- 1 Many modal verbs in Serbian are formed from the verb **требати/trebati** (to need).

Present tense of **требати/trebati** (to need)

sg.	1st p.	требам	trebam	I need
	2nd p.	требаш	trebaš	you need
	3rd p.	треба	treba	he/she/it needs
pl.	1st p.	требамо	trebamo	we need
	2nd p.	треbate	trebate	you need
	3rd p.	требају	trebaju	they need

- (a) **Треба да/treba da** + the present tense is used to express the equivalent of ‘to need to/to have to/should’:

Треба да идемо. Treba da idemo. We need to go.

- (b) **Требаће да/trebaće da** + the present tense is used to express the equivalent of ‘will need to/will have to/should’:

Требаће да идемо. Trebaće da idemo. We will need to go.

- (c) **Требало је да/trebalo je da** + the past tense is used to express the equivalent of ‘needed to/should have’:

Требало је да смо отишли. Trebalo je da smo otišli. We should have gone.

- (d) **Требало би да/trebalo bi da** + present tense is used to express ‘ought to’:

Требало би да разговарамо с њом. Trebalo bi da razgovaramo s njom. We ought to talk to her.

The verb following **да/da** corresponds to the subject in the present tense.

- (e) **Требало би да/trebalo bi da** + past tense is used to express ‘ought to have’:

Требало би да смо разговарали с њом. Trebalo bi da smo razgovarali s njom. We ought to have talked to her.

The verb following **да/da** corresponds to the subject in the past tense.

All the forms of **требати/trebati** – **треба да/treba da**, **требаће да/trebaće da**, **требало је да/trebalo je da** and **требало би да/trebalo bi da** – remain in the 3rd person singular (3rd person singular *neuter* is used with the past tense formation), while the verb following **да/da** agrees with the subject.

In addition to its use as a modal verb, **требати/trebati** is used when expressing a need for something. The logical subject of the verb **требати/trebati** is in the dative case and represents the person who *needs* something, while the object, or person, *needed* is in the nominative case and is the grammatical subject of the sentence:

Њој треба кључ. **Njoj treba ključ.** She *needs* the key.
(The key is needed by/necessary to her.)

Требају нам нова кола. **Trebaju nam nova kola.** We *need* a new car.
(A new car is needed by/necessary to us.)

Although this verb has a regular conjugation, it is often used in the 3rd person singular. And since the subject of the sentence is not the person by whom the object is needed, but the object itself (in the above sentences the subjects are ‘the key’ and ‘the car’), the verb agrees in gender and number with it in all the tenses.

The past tense is formed using **треба/treba** + the past participle (needed):

Требали су јој кључеви за кола. **Trebali su joj ključevi za kola.** She *needed* keys for the car.

Требала су нам нова кола. **Trebala su nam nova kola.** We *needed* a new car.

The future tense is formed using **треба/treba** + **ће/će** (will need):

Требаће јој кључеви за кола. **Trebaće joj ključevi za kola.** She *will need* keys for the car.

Требаћете ми. **Trebaćete mi.** I *will need* you (pl.).

The adjective **потребан/potreban** (necessary) can replace the above. It is used with the auxiliary verb **бити/bititi** (to be):

Потребан јој је кључ за кола. **Potreban joj je ključ za kola.** She *needs* a key for the car.

Потребна су нам нова кола. **Potrebna su nam nova kola.** We *need* a new car.

In the past tense, this adjective is used with the auxiliary verb **бити/bititi** along with the past tense form of that verb, which will agree in gender and number with the subject:

Потребан јој је био кључ за кола.	Potrebna јој је bio ključ za kola.	She needed a key for the car.
Потребна су нам била нова кола.	Potrebna su nam bila nova kola.	We needed a new car.

- 2 **Моћи/моћи** (to be able to, can), when used as a modal verb, is followed either by the conjunction **да/da** and the main verb, or the infinitive of the main verb.

Present tense of **моћи/моћи** (to be able to, can)

sg.	1st p.	могу	mogu	I can
	2nd p.	можеш	možeš	you can
	3rd p.	може	može	he/she/it can
pl.	1st p.	можемо	možemo	we can
	2nd p.	можете	možete	you can
	3rd p.	могу	mogu	they can

Могу да купе карте преко интернета.	Mogu da kupe karte preko interneta.	They can buy the tickets over the internet.
--	--	---

Могу купити карте преко интернета.	Mogu kupiti karte preko interneta.
---	---

It is used in the past tense:

Могли су да купе карте преко интернета.	Mogli su da kupe karte preko interneta.	They could have bought the tickets over the internet.
--	--	---

And the future tense:

Моћи ће да купе карте преко интернета.	Moći će da kupe karte preko interneta.	They will be able to buy the tickets over the internet.
---	---	---

Nouns

Nouns are the names of people, animals, things, places, events, ideas, etc.

Nouns are classified by gender – every noun will be of *masculine*, *feminine* or *neuter* gender (see Section 7.2 Gender of nouns). Nouns are also either singular or plural, a distinction referred to as *number*. A noun has a function in a sentence: it can be the subject or the direct or indirect object of a sentence; it can also show possession or stand after a preposition, and so on. This function is generally identified in English through word order. In Serbian, the function of a noun in a sentence is established by its ending. The ending will indicate what case the noun is in, and therefore what function it has in the sentence (see Section 7.3 Cases of nouns).

The ending a noun will have through the cases will depend on the ending it has in its original form (see Section 7.4 Declension of nouns). In order to apply and recognise the endings of a noun through the cases correctly, and thus ascertain the function of that noun in a sentence, it is important to know the original form of a noun. This is the form in which a noun is given in the dictionary and it corresponds to the nominative case.

Nouns are classified by their gender and the ending they have in the nominative case. Each separate class will decline differently through the cases. There are three basic declensions. For each declension, the basic root of the noun, as it appears in the genitive case, minus the genitive ending, will have endings added to it as it changes through all the cases.

Although the concept of classes and declensions may initially be confusing and difficult to grasp, the student will be able to assign the correct ending to a noun once he or she can recognise the class of nouns to which it belongs.

7.1 Types of nouns

Nouns are classified by type in accordance with what they signify. Nouns belonging to a particular type will often end in a suffix typical of that type:

- 1 Proper nouns are names. They include names of people, countries, cities, etc.:

Елизабета Elizabeta Elisabeth

Тексас Teksas Texas

The following are some groups of suffixes which proper nouns often have:

Names of countries:

-ија Србија -ija Srbija Serbia

-ска Ирска -ska Irska Ireland

-шка Норвешка -ška Norveška Norway

-чка Немачка -čka Nemačka Germany

Names of male inhabitants:

-ац Ирац -ac Irac Irish (male)

-анин Норвежанин -anin Norvežanin a man from Norway

-чанин Ирачанин -čanin Iračanin an Iraqi man

-лија Бечлија -lija Bečlija a man from Vienna

(Беч/Већ)

Names of female inhabitants:

-киња Српкиња -kinja Srpkinja a woman from Serbia

-ка Норвежанка -ka Norvežanka a woman from Norway

-ица Немица -ica Nemica a woman from Germany

Male names often have:

-ко Данко -ko Danko Danko (name)

Female names often have:

-ица Милица -ica Milica Milica (name)

Surnames have:

-чић	Љубичић	-čić	Ljubičić	Ljubičić (surname)
-евић	Павићевић	-ević	Pavićević	Pavićević (surname)
-овић	Стевановић	-ović	Stevanović	Stevanović (surname)

2 Common nouns represent entities sharing common traits:

лист list leaf

прстен prsten ring

Many common nouns end in one of the following groups of suffixes:

-а	жена	-а	žena	woman
-ац	мушкарац	-аc	muškarac	man
-ација	регистрација	-acija	registracija	registration
-ач	отварач	-ač	otvarač	opener
-ача	ломача	-ača	lomača	stake
-ај	лежај	-aj	ležaj	bed, couch
-ак	сељак	-ak	seljak	peasant
-аљка	певаљка	-ljka	pevaljka	singer (pub singer)
-ан	наркоман	-an	narkoman	drug addict
-ана	теретана	-ana	teretana	gym (weight room)
-ар	поштар	-ar	poštar	postman
-ара	стражара	-ara	stražara	guardroom/ house
-аш	робијаш	-aš	robijaš	prisoner
-ба	селидба	-ba	selidba	a move
-че	младунче	-če	mladunče	the young of an animal
-џија	силеџија	-džija	siledžija	bully, rapist
-етина	краветина	-etina	kravetina	cow (derogatory)

-ица	секретарица	-ica	sekretarica	secretary
-иште	игралиште	-ište	igralište	playground
-иво	пециво	-ivo	pecivo	baked bread, roll, bun
-јак	просјак	-jak	prosjak	beggar
-ка	сељанка	-ka	seljanka	a village woman/ peasant
-киња	слүшкиња	-kinja	sluškinja	servant (female)
-ко	дебелько	-ko	debeljko	fatso (male)
-лац	посетилац	-lac	posetilac	visitor
-лица	лүталица	-lica	lotalica	wanderer
-ло	помагало	-lo	pomagalo	aid
-ница	чекаоница	-nica	čekaonica	waiting room
-ник	слүжбеник	-nik	službenik	official
-оња	носоња	-onja	nosonja	big nose
-ов	лажов	-ov	lažov	liar
-овина	дедовина	-ovina	dedovina	grandfather's inheritance
-тељ	пријатељ	-telj	prijatelj	friend
-тор	мајстор	-tor	majstor	expert, skilled person
-үша	плавүша	-uša	plavuša	a blonde (female)

3 Mass nouns refer to quantity when used in the singular, and to different types of a particular item when used in the plural:

шећер šećer sugar **шећери** sēćeri sugars

кафа kafa coffee **кафе** kafe coffees

Many mass nouns end in one of the following groups of suffixes:

-ада оранжада **-ada** oranžada orangeade

-ача лозовача **-ača** lozovača grape brandy

-аш гүлаш **-aš** gulaš meat stew

-ће	воће	-ће	voće	fruit
-етина	пилетина	-etina	piletina	poultry
-ица	комовица	-ica	komovica	wine brandy
-ина	говедпина	-ina	govedina	beef
-овина	сомовина	-ovina	somovina	salmon

- 4 Collective nouns consist of separate entities belonging to a collective entity generally acting as a singular whole:

група група group

нација нација nation

Many collective nouns end in one of the following groups of suffixes:

-ад*	прасад	-ad*	prasad	piglets
-еж**	младеж	-ež**	mladež	youth
-ија**	старудија	-ija**	starudija	old objects
-ја*	браћа	-ja*	braća	brothers
-је***	дрвеће	-je***	drveće	trees

* Nouns with these suffixes are declined as singular feminine nouns with a plural verb.

** Nouns with these suffixes are declined as singular feminine nouns with a singular verb.

*** Nouns with this suffix: **биље/bilje** (plants), **лишће/lišće** (leaves), **грање/granje** (branches), etc., although plural in meaning, are treated and declined as a singular neuter noun.

- 5 Abstract nouns refer to intangible concepts and are also a subtype of common nouns:

вера **vera** faith

пријатељство **prijateljstvo** friendship

заробљеништво **zarobljeništvo** captivity

Many abstract nouns end in one of the following groups of suffixes:

-а	мука	-a	muka	nausea
-ација	ситуација	-acija	situacija	situation

-aj	догађај	-aj	dogadžaj	event
-ak	одлазак	-ak	odlazak	departure
-арија	глупарија	-arija	gluparija	stupidity
-ба	злоупотреба	-ba	zloupotreba	abuse
-еж	трүлеж	-ež	trulež	rotteness
-ење	упозорење	-enje	upozorenje	caution
-ић	Божић	-ić	Božić	Christmas
-ија	историја	-ija	istorija	history
-ика	граматика	-ika	gramatika	grammar
-ило	беснило	-ilo	besnilo	rabies
-ина	поштарина	-ina	poštarina	postage
-иште	становиште	-ište	stanovište	point of view
-изам	тероризам	-izam	terorizam	terrorism
-ја	градња	-ja	gradnja	construction
-је	празноверје	-je	praznoverje	superstition
-јење	опкољење	-jenje	opkoljenje	surrounding, blockade
-лук	мамүрлук	-luk	mamurluk	hangover
-ња	љүтња	-nja	ljutnja	anger
-њава	пүцњава	-njava	pucnjava	shooting
-оћа	самоћа	-oća	samoća	loneliness
-ост	младост	-ost	mladost	youth
-ота	срамота	-ota	sramota	shame
-овина	пүстоловина	-ovina	pustolovina	adventure
-ство	лүкавство	-stvo	lukavstvo	cunningness
-штина	немаштина	-ština	nemaština	poverty

Nouns formed from verbs belong to this group of nouns. As the name implies, the roots of these nouns originate from verbs. They are neuter singular:

певање ревање singing

пливање пливање swimming

The main suffix for these nouns is **-ње/ње**, which is added to the infinitive stem of the verb (see Section 6.1 Infinitives – classification):

-ње	гледање	-ње	gledanje	watching
	чекање		čekanje	waiting
	спавање		spavanje	sleeping
	устајање		ustajanje	getting up
	седење		sedenje	sitting
	ходање		hodaње	walking
	трчање		trčanje	running

7.2 Gender of nouns

Nouns in Serbian have gender. Every noun is either of masculine, feminine or neuter gender. The ending of a noun indicates its gender. In the singular, masculine nouns usually end in a consonant; feminine nouns usually end in **-a**, while neuter nouns end in **-e** or **-o**:

Singular

камион	kamion	lorry (m)
кућа	kuća	house (f)
село	selo	village (n)

There are exceptions to these:

- some masculine nouns end in **-a** and **-o** (see Sections 7.4.1 and 7.4.2);
- some feminine nouns end in a consonant or **-o** (see Section 7.4.3);

Singular

деда	deda	grandfather (m)
радост	radost	joy (f)
со	so	salt (f)

In the plural, most masculine nouns ending in a consonant end in **-и/i**, feminine nouns ending in **-a** end in **-e**, while neuter nouns end in **-a**:

Plural

камиони	kamioni	lorries (m)
----------------	----------------	-------------

куће	kuće	houses (f)
села	sela	villages (n)

Exceptions to these are:

- masculine nouns ending in **-a** have an **-e** ending in the plural;
- feminine nouns ending in a consonant or **-o** have an **-и/i** ending in the plural:

деда – дедe	deda – dede	grandfather – grandfathers (m)
радост – радости	radost – radosti	joy – joys (f)
со(л) – соли	so(l) – soli	salt – salts (f)

7.3 Cases of nouns

Regardless of the role (subject, object, etc.) a noun, noun phrase or pronoun plays in a sentence, in English its form generally remains the same. Most changes that occur to endings of nouns are related to the formation of the plural: ‘tree – trees, house – houses’, etc. (Pronouns, on the other hand, do have a change in form where ‘I’ is used to express the *subject* of a sentence, and ‘me’ expresses the *object*.) As the noun essentially remains the same, its function or role in a sentence is generally indicated by word order and/or a preposition.

Serbian, however, is an inflected language. This means that for every role that a noun, noun phrase or pronoun plays in a sentence, a different form of the noun is used. These changes in form are achieved through the use of different endings added to the stem of the noun and any words qualifying it. The various functions are categorised into seven ‘cases’. Each case consists of a set of endings for each type of noun, pronoun or adjective. These endings serve as markers as they tell us how a noun (or adjective) is to be construed in relationship to other words depending on the role it plays in the sentence.

This change of noun form through the cases is referred to as a *declension*. It is said that a noun *declines*, ‘falls away’ from the previous form. With this thought in mind, Roman grammarians named the various cases of a declension after the Latin word *casus*, which means ‘fallen’ from *cadere* ‘to fall’. The idea was that the nominative case (the first case, in which was given the *name* of the noun, thus making it the subject of a sentence) would be at the top and the other cases would be falling away, ‘declining’, from it.

The seven cases in Serbian are:

- Nominative: the nominative case is used to indicate the subject of a sentence:

Мајка долази. **Majka dolazi.** *Mother is coming.*

- Genitive: ‘possession’ is expressed by the genitive – the English ‘s’ and ‘of’; many prepositions also take this case:

Идемо у центар града. **Idemo u centar grada.** *We are going to the centre of town.*

- Dative: the dative case may express purpose, direction or possession, or personal interest in an event. It is also the only way to express the person ‘indirectly’ interested in an action:

Мајка је дала сину поклон. **Majka je dala sinu poklon.** *Mother gave (to) her son a present.*

- Accusative: the only way to express the direct object of a transitive verb is the accusative case:

Мајка пева песму. **Majka peva pesmu.** *Mother is singing a song.*

- Vocative: the vocative case form is used to indicate words of naming the addressee in direct address:

Мајко, дођи! **Majko, dođi!** *Mother, come!*

- Instrumental: the instrumental case is used to indicate the company, instrument or vehicle with which or by which an action is taking place:

Идемо са мајком у град. **Idemo sa majkom u grad.** *We’re going with mother to town.*

- Locative: the locative or prepositional case indicates location – it is also the only case which can only be used with a preposition:

Били смо јуче у граду. **Bili smo juče u gradu.** *We were in town yesterday.*

Although each case is associated with a particular usage or meaning, there are more ways than one to express any given meaning. Equally, no one case offers only one meaning, as one can always put things ‘in other words’. However, the cases and their particular usages do offer us the possibility to construct a sentence in which the words are in a particular relationship with each other, thus providing a particular meaning.

The following are endings for cases of all three genders of nouns:

Singular

	Masculine		Neuter	Feminine	
	Animate	Inanimate			
Nom.	дечак dečak	аўтобус autobus	село selo	жена žena	ноћ noć
Gen.	дечака dečaka	аўтобуса autobusa	села sela	жене žene	ноћи noći
Dat.	дечаку dečaku	аўтобусу autobusu	селу selu	жени ženi	ноћи noći
Acc.	дечака dečaka	аўтобус autobus	село selo	жену ženu	ноћ noć
Voc.	дечаче dečače	аўтобусе autobuse	село selo	жено ženo	ноћи noći
Inst.	дэчаком dečakom	аўтобусом autobusom	селом selom	женом ženom	ноћи/ноћу noći/noću
Loc.	дечаку dečaku	аўтобусу autobusu	селу selu	жени ženi	ноћи noći

Plural

	Masculine		Neuter	Feminine	
	Animate	Inanimate			
Nom.	дечаци dečaci	аўтобуси autobusi	села sela	жене žene	ноћи noći
Gen.	дечака dečaka	аўтобуса autobusa	села sela	жена žena	ноћи noći
Dat.	дэчацима dečacima	аўтобусима autobusima	селима selima	женама ženama	ноћима noćima
Acc.	дэчаке dečaке	аўтобусе autobuse	села sela	жене žene	ноћи noći

Voc.	дечаци	аутобуси	села	жене	ноћи
	dečaci	autobusi	sela	žene	noći
Inst.	дечацима	аутобусима	селима	женама	ноћима
	dečacima	autobusima	selima	ženama	noćima
Loc.	дечацима	аутобусима	селима	женама	ноћима
	dečacima	autobusima	selima	ženama	noćima

Titles of books, plays, films, etc. are declined unless they are preceded by nouns which define them. These nouns themselves are declined: **филм/film** (film), **књига/knjiga** (book), **хотел/hotel** (hotel), etc.

Читам „Харија Потера“. **Čitam „Harija Potera“.** I'm reading 'Harry Potter'.

Читам књигу „Хари Потер“. **Čitam knjigu „Hari Potter“.** I'm reading the book 'Harry Potter'.

An illustration of how cases function:

Петар/Petar . . . (Peter . . .)	nominative
је без сувозача/je bez suvozača. (is without a co-driver.)	genitive
је писао сувозачу/je pisao suvozaču. (wrote to his co-driver.)	dative
је видео сувозача/je video suvozača. (saw the co-driver.)	accusative
је викнуо “Сувозаче”/je viknuo “Suvozače!”. (shouted Hey, co-driver!)	vocative
је видео жену са сувозачем/je video ženu sa suvozačem. (saw a woman with his co-driver.)	instrumental
је причао о сувозачу/je pričao о сувозачу. (spoke about the co-driver.)	locative

7.3.1 Nominative case

The basic form of a noun, pronoun or adjective, as it is given in the dictionary, will be in the nominative case. This form of the noun is independent of all other words in the sentence which, directly or indirectly, will be dependent on it.

The nominative case is the case for the subject of a sentence. The subject is the person or thing about which the predicate makes a statement, and the name, ‘nominative’, in Latin, means ‘pertaining to the person or thing designated’.

7.3.1.1 Uses of the nominative case

- When a noun or pronoun is the subject of a verb:

Човек ради. **Čovek radi.** *The man is working.*

Она је јуче дошла. **Она је јуче дошла.** *She came yesterday.*

Јован је наш пријатељ. **Jovan je naš prijatelj.** *Jovan is our friend.*

In Serbian the subject does not always need to be expressed as this information can be expressed by the verb:

Воле сладолед. **Vole sladoled.** *(They) love ice-cream.*

- When a noun or group of words are in apposition to the subject, i.e. they are re-stating something which has already been expressed by the subject:

Наш друг, Петар, ради. **Naš drug, Petar, radi.** *Our friend, Peter, is working.*

Милош, голман тима, никада не касни. **Miloš, golman tima, nikada ne kasni.** *Miloš, the team's goalkeeper, is never late.*

- With a noun, adjective or pronoun used as a predicate with the verb ‘to be’:

Петар је возач. **Petar je vozač.** *Peter is a driver.*

Филм је добар. **Film je dobar.** *The film is good.*

- When a word is used in exclamation:

Ватра! Vatra! *Fire!* **Лопов! Lopov!** *Thief!*

- The nominative case is used in reply to the following questions:

Ко? Ко? *Who?* and **Шта? Šta?** *What?*

Ко је дошао на вечеру? **Ko je došao na večeru?** *Who came for dinner?*

Шта се десило? **Šta se desilo?** *What happened?*

These two interrogatives have no plural form; **ко?/ко?** is masculine and **шта?/šta?** neuter in gender.

The following interrogatives agree both in number and in gender with the noun:

Which?			What kind?			
	(m)	(n)	(f)	(m)	(n)	(f)
sg.	који	које	која	какав	какво	каква
	koji	koje	koja	kakav	kakvo	kakva
pl.	који	која	које	какви	каква	какве
	koji	koja	koje	kakvi	kakva	kakve
How big?			Whose?			
	(m)	(n)	(f)	(m)	(n)	(f)
sg.	колики	колико	колика	чији	чије	чија
	koliki	koliko	kolika	čiji	čije	čija
pl.	колико	колика	колике	чији	чија	чије
	koliko	kolika	kolike	čiji	čija	čije

It is important to remember that words in the nominative case are never preceded by a preposition.

7.3.2 Genitive case

There are many uses of the genitive case. It is a convenient way of indicating relationships between nouns and one of its main uses is to attach a noun to a noun, while expressing a relationship of possession. Of all the cases, sentences containing the genitive case are the most complex. In addition to expressing possession, the greatest number of prepositions take this case, as do many adverbs.

7.3.2.1 Uses of the genitive

- To express possession, the equivalent of ‘s’ in English, and origin. It denotes a sense of belonging to – of – from. The genitive case indicates who possesses an object.

Ово су кола професора. **Ovo su kola profesora.** This is the car *of the professor* (the professor’s car).

Да ли је то кућа дечака? **Da li je to kuća dečaka?** Is that the house *of the boy* (the boy’s house)?

This case must be used when there is a modifier on the possessor:

Ово су кола професора Митића.	Ovo su kola Profesora Mitića.	This is <i>Professor Mitić's</i> car.
Да ли је то кућа малог дечака?	Da li je to kuća malog dečaka?	Is that the house of the <i>little boy</i> ?

Otherwise, the ordinary possessive adjective or pronoun can be used:

Ово су професорова (ор Митићева) кола.	Ovo su profesorova (or Mitićeva) kola.	This is <i>the professor's</i> (or <i>Mitić's</i>) car.
Да ли је то дечакова кућа?	Da li je to dečakova kuća?	Is that <i>the boy's</i> house?

The genitive must also be used with words that have no possessive adjectival form:

Зграбио је дршку тигања.	Zgrabio je dršku tiganja.	He grabbed the handle of <i>the frying pan</i> . (not: <i>the frying pan's</i> handle)
---------------------------------	----------------------------------	---

When a woman's name and surname are used to indicate possession, the first name takes the genitive while the surname remains unchanged:

Ово је муж Ане Маринковић.	Ovo je muž Ane Marinković.	This is the husband of <i>Ana Marinković</i> .
-----------------------------------	-----------------------------------	--

The preposition **код/код** is also followed by the genitive to indicate a person's house/flat/office/room:

Ми смо код маме.	Mi smi kod mame.	We are <i>at (my) mum's</i> .
-------------------------	-------------------------	-------------------------------

- Like the temporal accusative, the temporal genitive is used in expressions of time and has an adverbial function. It is generally used in response to the question 'When?':

Она пере косу сваког дана.	Ona pere kosu svakog dana.	She washes her hair <i>every day</i> .
Идуће недеље идемо на море.	Iduće nedelje idemo na more.	We're going to the coast <i>next week</i> .

- Numerals from five onward in all three genders are followed by the noun and adjective in the genitive plural (numerals from two to four in the feminine gender take the nominative plural, while

nouns and adjectives following numerals from two to four in the masculine and neuter genders have an -a ending, which also appears on participles in verb forms):

Два човека су дошла.	Dva čoveka su došla.	<i>Two men came.</i>
Три села су српска.	Tri sela su srpska.	<i>Three villages are Serbian.</i>
Пет жена је певало.	Pet žena je pevalo.	<i>Five women sang (were singing).</i>
Двадесетосам мушкараца је седело за столом.	Dvadesetosam muškaraca je sedelo za stolom.	<i>Twenty-eight men were sitting at the table.</i>

Note: Numbers above and including five take the neuter singular verb, while numbers from two to four take the plural verb (see Chapter 14 Numerals).

- To express a partitive quality (when something is *part of* something else): the genitive is used for the larger whole of which something is a part. An example is **део куће/deo kuće** (part of the house). **Кућа/kuća** (the house) is the whole of which **део/deo** is a part.
- Quantifiers denoting partitive quantity: **нешто/nešto** (some), **превише/previše** (too much), **мало/malo** (a little), **премало/premalo** (too little), **довољно/dovoljno** (an adequate amount of), etc. are followed by the genitive singular:

Дајте нам мало воде. **Dajte nam malo vode.** *Give us a little water.*

or the genitive plural:

Имамо нешто питања. **Imamo nešto pitanja.** *We have some questions.*

- Nouns denoting partitive quantity: **векна/vekna** (a loaf of), **кило/kilo** (a kilo of), **метар/metar** (a metre of), **кап/kap** (a drop of), etc. take the genitive singular while **група/grupa** (a group of), **колона/kolona** (a column of), **низ/niz** (a series of), **пар/par** (a couple of) take the genitive plural (see Chapter 15 Quantifiers):

Молим вас, литар бензина. **Molim vas, litar benzina.** *A litre of petrol please.*

Група студената је прошла поред њих. **Grupa studenata je prošla pored njih.** *A group of students passed them.*

Појео је парче торте. **Pojeo je parče torte.** *He ate a piece of cake.*

- Nouns denoting objects of uncountable quantity (where in English ‘some’ would be used) go in the genitive singular:

Купили смо шећера.	Kupili smo šećera.	We bought (some) <i>sugar</i> .
Јело му се чоколаде.	Jelo mu se čokolade.	He felt like eating (some) <i>chocolate</i> .

- Quantifiers expressing a countable quantity (including the English ‘a number of’): **неколико/nekoliko** (several), **много/mnogo** (many), **пуно/пuno** (a lot of), **доста/dosta** (enough), **довољно/dovoljno** (an adequate number of) take the genitive plural:

Купили смо неколико саксија.	Kupili smo nekoliko saksija.	We bought a number of (several) <i>flower pots</i> .
Више студената је чекало.	Više studenata је čekalo.	A number of <i>students</i> waited.

- Number nouns: **двојица/dvojica** (a group of two), **тројица/trojica** (a group of three), **четворица/četvorica** (a group of four), etc. take the genitive plural:

Двојица момака чекају своје девојке.	Dvojica momaka čekaju svoje devojke.	(a group of) <i>Two young men</i> are waiting for their girlfriends.
Десеторица кондуктера је у аутобусу.	Desetorica konduktera је u autobusu.	(a group of) <i>Ten conductors</i> are in the bus.

As with numerals, this group of nouns takes the singular verb following five and upward, and the plural verb from two to four.

- With the verbs **бити/bititi** (in the past tense) and **имати/imati** when used in impersonal constructions – ‘there is/there was/there exists/there existed’ – and the negative **није било/nije bilo** and **немати/nemati** ‘there is not/there was not’:

(a) With a plural countable noun, the genitive plural is used:

У нашем је граду било лепих кућа.	U našem је gradu nije bilo lepih kuća.	<i>There were beautiful houses</i> in our town.
У нашем граду има лепих кућа.	U našem gradu ima lepih kuća.	<i>There are beautiful houses</i> in our town.
У нашем граду нема лепих кућа.	U našem gradu nema lepih kuća.	<i>There are no beautiful houses</i> in our town.

- (b) With uncountable nouns, the genitive singular is used:

Било је воде у чесми. **Bilo је воде у česmi.** *There was water in the tap.*

Није било воде у чесми. **Nije bilo vode у česmi.** *There was no water in the tap.*

- (c) When the noun is in the singular the nominative case is used:

Овде је некада била фонтана. **Ovde је nekada била фонтана.** *There was once a fountain here.*

Овде није никада била фонтана. **Ovde nije nikada била fontana.** *There was never a fountain here.*

Има ли добар хотел овде? **Ima li dobar hotel овде?** *Is there a good hotel here?*

- The genitive can also be used with the modal verbs **требати/ trebati** (to need) and **хтети/hteti** (to want):

Треба нам новца. **Treba нам новца.** *We need money.*

Хоћу торте. **Hoću torte.** *I want (some) cake.*

- The genitive is used with the following adjectives:

вредан **vredan** worthy of

гладан **gladan** hungry for

достојан **dostojan** deserving/worthy of

жедан **žedan** thirsty for

жељан **željan** desirous of

пун **pun** full of

свестан **svestan** conscious of

сит **sit** satiated with

- The genitive is used with the following verbs:

- (a) Verbs with **-на/na** prefix:

најести се **najesti се** to eat to satiety

напити се **napiti се** to drink to drunkenness/
satiety

наслушати се **naslušati се** to listen until satiated

набрати **nabrati** to pick a quantity of fruit

начекати се **načekati се** to wait for a long time

etc.

(b) Reflexive verbs of which the object is in the genitive:

зажелети се	zaželeti se	to be desirous of
сећати се	sećati se	to remember
сетити се	setiti se	to remember
дохватити се	dohvatiti se	to reach for
држати се	držati se	to hold onto
латити се	latiti se	to undertake
примити се	primiti se	to take onto oneself
тицати се	ticati se	to affect
прихватити се	prihvatiti se	to take on, take responsibility for

(c) The verb **доћи/doći** (to come) – when implying cost or price:

Живота ће нас доћи овај одмор.	Života će nas doći ovaj odmor.	This holiday will cost us our lives.
Немој да те то дође главе.	Nemoj da te to dođe glave.	Don't let that cost you your head (life).

(d) With negative transitive verbs:

Немамо хлеба.	Nemamo hleba.	We don't have bread.
----------------------	----------------------	----------------------

- The genitive is also used with the adverb **жао/žao** (to feel pity/sorry for):

Жао ми је жене. **Žao mi je žene.** *I feel sorry for the woman. (it's because of the woman that I feel sorry)*

and following words and particles expressing surprise:

гле	gle	look at ...
ево	evo	here (is) ...
ено	eno	over there (is) ...
ето	eto	there (is) ...

- The genitive is used with the following nouns:

крај	kraj	the end of
почетак	početak	the beginning of
средина	sredina	the middle of

- The genitive is used with the following prepositions:

од	od	from (animate)
из	iz	from (inanimate)
са	sa	from (inanimate) off
вратити се:	vratiti se:	to return:
од родитеља	od roditelja	<i>from one's parents (an.)</i>
из позоришта	iz pozorišta	<i>from the theatre (inan.)</i>
из Србије	iz Srbije	<i>from Serbia</i>
са Косова	sa Kosova	<i>from Kosovo</i>
са аеродрома	sa aerodroma	<i>from the airport</i>
Узела је књигу са стола	Uzela je knjigu sa stola.	<i>She took the book from the table. (off the table)</i>
Он је са села.	On je sa sela.	<i>He is from the village (the country).</i>
до	do	up to, until
испред	ispred	in front of
иза	iza	behind
између	između	between
изнад	iznad	above
испод	ispod	under
код	kod	at/with someone/ someone's place
близу	blizu	near
поред	pored	beside, next to
крај	kraj	next to
дуж	duž	along
испред	ispred	in front of
насред	nasred	in the middle of
ван	van	outside
око	oko	around
након	nakon	after, following
после	posle	after, following, afterwards
пре	pre	before

уочи	uoći	on the eve of
усред	usred	in the middle of
због	zbog	because
ради	radi	for the purpose/sake of
без	bez	without
осим	osim	except, excluding
сем	sem	except, excluding
место	mesto	in the place of
уместо	umesto	instead of

The genitive is used in answer to the following questions:

Кога? Koga Whom? **Чера? Čega** What?

(These have no plural form.)

Кога се сећаш? Koga se sećaš? Whom do you remember?

Чера се сећаш? Čega se sećaš? What do you remember?

	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	
sg.	ко(је)г/ко(је)г	ко(је)г/ко(је)г	које/које	Which?
pl.		којих/којих		
sg.	каквог/kakvog	каквог/kakvog	какве/ kakve	What kind/type of?
pl.		каквих/kakvih		
sg.	коликог/ kolikog	коликог/ kolikog	колике/ kolike	What size?
pl.		коликих/kolikih		
sg.	чијег/čijeg	чијег/čijeg	чије/čije	Whose?
pl.		чијих/čijih		

7.3.2.2 Formation of the genitive

The following are the endings for nouns in the genitive:

Masculine Class I	Neuter Class I	Feminine Class II	Feminine Class III
aeroplane	village	house	country
aviон	село	кућа	земља
avion	selo	kuća	zemlja
aviони	села	куће	земље
avioni	sela	kuće	zemlje
aviона	села	куће	земље
aviona	sela	kuće	zemlje
aviонā	селā	кућā	земљā
aviona	sela	kuća	zemlja
-a	-a	-e, -a	-e, -a
Note: the fleeting a reappears in the genitive plural	Note: an -a is inserted between the final consonants in gen. pl. where the nom. sg. ends in a consonant group ending with final consonant т .	Note: nom. sg. and the gen. pl. groups before the ending, the fleeting а appears in the gen. pl.	Note: nom. and gen. pl. ending is -и .
conductor	morning	house	country
диригент	јутро	кућа	земља
dirigent	jutro	kuća	zemlja
диригенти	јутра	куће	земље
dirigenti	jutra	kuće	zemlje
диригентā	јутра	куће	земље
dirigenta	jutra	kuće	zemlje
диригентā	јутрā	кућā	земљā
dirigenata	jutara	kuća	zemlja
-a	-a	-e, -a	-e, -a
Note: the fleeting a reappears in the genitive plural	Note: the fleeting a appears only in the gen. pl. with consonant groups other than ст, шт, шћ, зд .	Note: nom. sg. and the gen. pl. groups before the ending, the fleeting а appears in the gen. pl.	Note: nom. and gen. pl. ending is -и .

7.3.3 Dative case

The dative case is the case of the indirect object, denoting a person (or object) to or for whom something (the direct object) is intended or directed. In 'I gave the pen to him', 'to him' would be in the dative case. This common usage gives the case its name: it is the case that pertains to giving; when something is given or intended or in the interest of someone, it is said to be 'for' that person.

The dative case can be used with or without a preposition, and is common after verbs that indicate particular types of activities.

7.3.3.1 Uses of the dative**Without a preposition**

The dative is used with a variety of verbs:

- Verbs of giving and receiving, providing something for/to someone:

Imperfective	Perfective	Imperfective	Perfective	
давати	дати	davati	dati	to give
поклањати	поклонити	poklanjati	pokloniti	to present, donate
уручивати	уручити	uručivati	uručiti	to hand over
намењивати	наменити	namenjivati	nameniti	to intend, earmark
слати	послати	slati	poslati	to send
враћати	вратити	vraćati	vratiti	to return
желети	пожелети	želeti	poželeti	to wish
помагати	помоћи	pomagati	pomoći	to help
пружати	пружити	pružati	pružiti	to offer
куповати	купити	kupovati	kupiti	to buy
служити	послужити	služiti	poslužiti	to serve

Помогао је жртвама.

Pomogao је žrtvama.

He helped the victims.

Пожелели су деци срећан пут.

Poželeli су deci srećan put.

They wished the children a good journey.

- Verbs of telling, advising, complaining, talking to, lying, intending and others:

Imperfective	Perfective	Imperfective	Perfective	
казати		kazati		to say
говорити	рећи	govoriti	reći	to say, tell
јављати	јавити	javljati	javiti	to report, call
писати	написати	pisati	napisati	to write
поручивати	поручити	poručivati	poručiti	to convey
упућивати	упутити	upućivati	uputiti	to address, direct
захваљивати	захвалити	zahvaljivati	zahvaliti	to thank
се	се	се	се	
објашњавати	објаснити	objašnjavati	objasniti	to explain
жалити	пожалити	žaliti	požaliti	to complain
веровати	поверовати	verovati	poverovati	to believe

Одмах смо рекли Марку. **Odmah smo rekli Marku.** We told Marko straight away.

Адвокат ми је саветовао да сачекам. **Advokat mi je savetovao da sačekam.** The solicitor advised me to wait.

- Verbs of motion with **-при/pri** prefix, denoting an action of approaching or bringing something closer:

Imperfective	Perfective	Imperfective	Perfective	
прилазити	прићи	prilaziti	prići	to approach
приносити	принети	prinositi	prineti	to bring closer to
притицати	притећи	priticati	priteći	to flow, run up to

Чувар је пажљиво пришао животињи. **Čuvar je pažljivo prišao životinji.** The keeper carefully approached the animal.

Полицајац је притекао жени у помоћ. **Policaјac je pritekao ženi u pomoć.** The policeman ran to the woman to help.

- Verbs used in creating idiomatic expressions, including those with impersonal constructions, and verbs used to express a liking for something:

Imperfective	Perfective	Imperfective	Perfective	
дешавати се	десити се	dešavati se	desiti se	to happen*
догађати се	догодити се	dogadati se	dogoditi se	to happen, occur*
свиђати се	свидети се	svidati se	svideti se	to like, find attractive
гадити се	згадити се	gaditi se	zgaditi se	to feel sickened, revolted
дивити се	здивити се	diviti se	zadiviti se	to admire
чинити се	учинити се	činiti se	učiniti se	to seem*
изгледати		izgledati		to seem, appear*
допадати се	допасти се	dopadati se	dopasti se	to find attractive
надати се	понадати се	nadati se	ponadati se	to hope
радовати се	обрадовати се	radovati se	obradovati se	to look forward to
сметати	засметати	smetati	zasmetati	to mind, find bothersome

* These verbs are used in the 3rd person, singular or plural, with the impersonal subject 'it', to express a reaction or interest in a thing or quality. Some may be specifically expressions of judgement, *Чини ми се да је добар човек*/*Čini mi se da je dobar čovek* (He seems to me to be a good man; that is, 'in my judgement, from my perspective, he appears to be a good man');

Свиђа ми се ова хаљина.	Sviđa mi se ova haljina.	This dress is likeable (attractive) to me.
Десило нам се нешто необично.	Desilo nam se nešto neobično.	Something unusual happened to us.
Чини ми се да ће падати киша.	Čini mi se da će padati kiša.	It seems to me that rain will fall.
Изгледа ми да ће падати снег.	Izgleda mi da će padati sneg.	It seems to me that snow will fall.

- Verbs to which **се/се** and a dative, usually a pronoun, are added to express a desire to do something:

Игра им се фудбал. **Igra im se fudbal.** They feel like playing football.
(it feels like *playing to them*)

Не спава јој се сада. **Ne spava joj se sada.** She doesn't feel like sleeping now.
(it doesn't feel like *sleeping to her*)

Пије му се сок. **Pije mu se sok.** He feels like drinking juice.
(it feels like *drinking to him*)

- Adverbs followed by personal pronouns and the appropriate short form – auxiliary to the verb **бити/бити** (to be), used to create impersonal constructions, expressing a state of being, feeling or reaction to an external influence whereby someone's reaction or interest in a thing or quality may be specifically that of perspective. For example, **драго јој је/drago јој је** ('it is pleasing to her', implying that, 'for her, in her eyes, it is pleasing'):

Мило (драго) ми је. **Milo (drago) mi je.** I feel glad (pleased).
(it is *pleasing to me*)

Било нам је хладно на планини. **Bilo nam je hladno na planini.** We felt cold in the mountains.
(it was *cold to us*)

Досадно ми је. **Dosadno mi je.** I feel bored.
(it is *boring to me*)

Интересантна му је твоја прича. **Interesantna mu je tvoja priča.** He feels interested in your story.
(your story is *interesting to him*)

Како ти је? **Kako ti je?** How do you feel?
(How is it to you?)

- The dative is often used to denote *possession*, especially with personal pronouns. However, it is different from the genitive in that it typically implies a personal connection, enjoyment, etc. that goes beyond the legal possession:

Где ти је муж? **Gde ti je muž?** Where is *your husband*?

Ово нам је наставник. **Ovo nam je nastavnik.** This is *our teacher*.

Не знам где су ми кључеви. **Ne znam gde su mi ključevi.** I don't know where *my keys* are.

With a preposition

There are only a few prepositions which take the dative case:

према	prema	towards, according to, facing, opposite
к/ка	k/ka	towards, according to, facing, opposite (with verbs of motion)
насупрот	nasuprot	opposite (increasingly used with genitive)
Авион лети према Лондону.	Avion leti prema Londonu.	The plane is flying towards London.
Они возе ка Лондону.	Oni voze ka Londonu.	They are driving towards London.
Дођи к мени.	Dođi k meni.	Come to me.

The dative is used in response to the following questions:

Коме	Kome	To whom?
Чему	Čemu	To what?

(These have no plural.)

Коме си дао новац?	Kome si dao novac?	To whom did you give the money?
Према коме је био љубазан?	Prema kome je bio ljubazan?	To whom was he polite?
Коме је данас рођендан?	Kome je danas rođendan?	To whom is it a birthday today? (Whose birthday is it today?)
Чему се надаш?	Čemu se nadaš?	What are you hoping for?

	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	
sg.	ко(је)м/ко(је)м	ко(је)м/ко(је)м	којој/којој	Which?
pl.		којим/којим		
sg.	каквом/kakvom	каквом/kakvom	каквој/kakvoj	What kind/What type of?
pl.		каквим/kakvim		
sg.	коликом/kolikom	коликом/kolikom	коликој/kolikoј	How big?
pl.		коликим/kolikim		

sg. pl.	чијем/чијем чијем/чијем	чијем/чијем чијем/чијем	чије/чије чије/чије	Whose?
	Којем студенту си дао књигу?	Kojem studentu si dao knjigu?		<i>To which student did you give the book?</i>
	Којем пријатељу је данас рођендан?	Kojem prijatelju je danas rođendan?		<i>Which friend has a birthday today?</i>
	Каквом човеку треба помоћ?	Kakvom čoveku treba pomoć?		<i>What kind of man needs help?</i>
	Коликом аутомобилу треба велика гаража?	Kolikom automobilu treba velika garaža?		<i>How big (what size of) a car needs a big garage?</i>
	Чијем детету си купио џемпер?	Čijem detetu si kupio džemper?		<i>For whose child did you buy a jumper?</i>

Examples of the dative in everyday speech:

- With expressions of gratitude:

Хвала ти/Вам	Hvala ti/Vam.	Thank you.
Захваљујем ти/Вам се.	Zahvaljujem ti/Vam se.	I thank you.
- On meeting someone:

Здраво, ја сам Злата.	Zdravo, ja sam Zlata.	Hello, I'm Zlata.
Драго ми је, ја сам Маја.	Drago mi je, ja sam Maja.	I'm glad to meet you, (it is pleasing to me to meet you) I'm Maja.
Драго ми је.	Drago mi je.	I'm glad to meet you. (It is pleasing to me to meet you.)
- With expressions of sympathy or condolences:

(Баш) ми је жао.	(Baš) mi je žao.	I'm (really) sorry. (It is sorry to me.)
-------------------------	-------------------------	---
- With expressions of good luck etc.:

Срећан ти пут.	Srećan ti put.	Have a good journey. (The journey to you be good.)
Јави ми се.	Javi mi se.	Call me.
Пиши ми.	Piši mi.	Write to me.
Желим вам срећну нову годину.	Želim vam srećnu novu godinu.	I wish you a Happy New Year.

7.3.3.2 Formation of the dative

As in the locative case, consonant alteration occurs, with many exceptions, before the **-и/і** of the feminine singular, and, with hardly any exceptions, before the **-има/іма** of the masculine and neuter plural:

-к/к changes to **-ц/с**
-г/г **-з/з**
х/х **-с/с**

The dative singular of nouns is formed as follows:

Singular:					
	Masculine		Neuter	Feminine	
	Consonant ending	-а ending	-о/-е	Consonant ending	-а ending
Dat.	орману	тати	селу/мору	ноћи/мисли	жени
	ormanu	tati	selu/moru	noči/mislii	ženi

Note: Masculine nouns ending in a consonant and neuter nouns have a **-у/у** ending in the dative.

All feminine nouns and masculine nouns ending in **-а** change to **-и/і**.

The dative plural of nouns is formed as follows:

Plural:					
	Masculine		Neuter	Feminine	
	Consonant ending	-а ending	-о/-е	Consonant ending	-а ending
Dat.	-има	-ама		-има	-ама
	-ima	-ama		-ima	-ama

Note: The dative plural endings for masculine nouns, neuter nouns and feminine nouns ending in a consonant have the same ending **-има/-іма**, while feminine and masculine nouns ending in **-а** have the ending **-ама/-ама**.

For dative endings of adjectives and pronouns, see appropriate sections.

7.3.4 Accusative case

The accusative is the case for the direct object – it is the case that indicates the end or ultimate goal of an action or movement. In the example: ‘I’m going to hit the ball’, ‘the ball’ is the end or the ultimate goal of my hitting and so becomes the direct object of the action and goes into the accusative case. This is the origin of the direct object.

Specifying the end of movement means that the accusative is attached especially to verbs of motion and to prepositions when they refer to motion. It can be used with or without prepositions. When there is no preposition in the accusative, a transitive verb must be used.

7.3.4.1 Uses of the accusative case

- The primary use of the accusative case is for the noun (or pronoun) which functions as the direct object of a sentence or clause.

Мирослава воли сладолед.	Miroslava voli sladoled.	Miroslava loves ice-cream. (m inanimate)*
Она такође воли Јована.	Ona takoђе voli Jovana.	She also loves Jovan. (m animate)*
Маријан гледа телевизију.	Marijan gleda televiziju.	Marijan is watching TV.
Он такође гледа Невенку.	On takoђе gleda Nevenku.	He is also watching Nevenka.

* Masculine nouns in the accusative singular are divided into animate and inanimate and as such have different endings. (See Section 7.3.4.1 Formation of the accusative case.)

- The direct object is arrived at through questions using the interrogatives ‘who?’ **ко/ко?** and ‘what?’ **шта/шта?** with the transitive verb. In the accusative, ‘Who?’ **ко/ко?** changes to **кого/кого** (whom), (as it does in the genitive). The interrogative ‘what?’ **шта/шта** remains as it is in the nominative case while the interrogative **куда/куда** (where to?) is used with **ћи/ићи** verbs and their derivatives.

Кого воли Мирослава?	Koga voli Miroslava?	Whom does Miroslava love?
Шта гледа Маријан?	Šta gleda Marijan?	What is Marijan watching?
Кого гледа Маријан?	Koga gleda Marijan?	Whom is he watching?

Куда иде Милан? Kuda ide Milan? Where is Milan going?

Милан иде у град. Milan ide u grad. Milan is going to town.

- The accusative case is also used after certain prepositions:
 - When the verb of the sentence or clause expresses or implies motion. These prepositions are also used with other cases when verbs of motion are not used:

у u into, in

на na into, on, at, onto, of

за za for, about, at

по po for, to pick up, to collect, one by one

Улазим у Ulazim u zgradu. I'm entering the building.
зграду. *building.*

Идемо на Idemo na odmor. We are going on holiday.
одмор. *holiday.*

Идем по децу. Idem po decu. I'm going to pick up the children.
децу. *children.*

Киша пада кап Kiša pada kap Rain is falling,
по кап. *drop by drop.*

Рано је за ручак. Rano je za ručak. It's early for lunch.

- And several other prepositions:

кроз kroz through, during the course of

низ niz down (as in downhill, or in a downward direction)

уз uz up (as in uphill, or in an upward direction), together with, near

пред pred just before, in front of

о o against (e.g. to lean against something)

међу među among

над nad directly above

под pod directly below

Она гледа Она гледа She is looking
кроз прозор. kroz prozor. *through the window.*

Војници ходају низ брдо.	Vojnici hodaju niz brdo.	The soldiers are walking <i>down</i> the hill.
Шетамо уз обалу.	Šetamo uz obalu.	We are walking <i>along</i> the shore.
Шта пијете уз јело?	Šta pijete uz jelo?	What do you drink <i>(along)</i> with your meal?
Путници су стигли <i>пред</i> хотел.	Putnici su stigli <i>pred</i> hotel.	The travellers arrived <i>in front of</i> the hotel.

- In many expressions of time:

цео дан	ceo dan	all day
свако јутро	svako jutro	every morning
по читаву ноћ	po čitavu noć	all night long
сваки дан	svaki dan	every day

- To express greetings or wishes:

добро јутро	dobro jutro	good morning
добар дан	dobar dan	good day
лаку ноћ	laku noć	good evening
срећан пут	srećan put	happy journey

The following are some of the verbs that take the accusative case:

анализирати	analizirati	to analyse
бацити	baciti	to throw
возити	voziti	to drive
волети	 voleti	to like/love
гледати	gledati	to watch
донети	doneti	to bring
желети	želeti	to desire
затворити	zatvoriti	to close
играти	igrati	to play
имати	imati	to have
љубити	ljubiti	to kiss

мрзети	mrzeti	to hate
отворити	otvoriti	to open
палити	paliti	to light
писати	pisati	to write
пушити	pušiti	to smoke
свирати	svirati	to play (instrument)
сипати	sipati	to pour
слушати	slušati	to listen
студирати	studirati	to study
тражити	tražiti	to seek
узети	uzeti	to take
чекати	čekati	to wait
читати	čitati	to read

7.3.4.1 Formation of the accusative case

The accusative singular of nouns is formed as follows:

Singular						
Masculine		Neuter		Feminine		
Animate	Inanimate	-a ending	-o/-e	consonant ending	-a ending	
soldier	wardrobe	dad	village/sea	night	young woman	
Nom. војник	орман	тата	село/море	ноћ	девојка	
vojniki	orman	tata	selo/more	noć	devojka	
Acc. војника	орман	тату	село/море	ноћ	девојку	
vojnika	orman	tatu	selo/more	noć	devojku	

- Masculine inanimate nouns (non-living), neuter nouns and feminine nouns ending in a consonant have endings in the accusative identical to those in the nominative singular:

	Nominative		Accusative		
m inanimate	КАМИОН	kamion	КАМИОН	kamion	truck
n	ПИВО	pivo	ПИВО	pivo	beer
f	НОЋ	ноћ	НОЋ	ноћ	night

- Masculine animate nouns (humans/animals) ending in a consonant end in an **-a** (as in the genitive singular):

	Nominative		Accusative		
m animate	МУШКАРАЦ	muškarac	МУШКАРЦА*	muškarca	man
	КОЊ	konj	КОЊА	konja	horse

* The fleeting a in the masculine accusative (see Section 4.1.5 Fleeting a).

- Feminine nouns ending in **-a** and masculine nouns ending in **-a** change to **-y**:

	Nominative		Accusative		
m	ТАТА	tata	ТАТУ	tatu	dad
f	МАМА	mama	МАМУ	mamu	mum

Plural:						
	Masculine		Neuter		Feminine	
	Animate	Inanimate	-a ending	-o/-e	Consonant ending	-a ending
	soldiers	wardrobes	dads	villages/seas	nights	young women
Nom.	ВОЈНИЦИ	ОРМАНИ	ТАТЕ	СЕЛА/МОРА	НОЋИ	ДЕВОЈКЕ
	vojnici	ormani	tate	sela/mora	noći	devojke
Acc.	ВОЈНИКЕ	ОРМАНЕ	ТАТЕ	СЕЛА/МОРА	НОЋИ	ДЕВОЈКЕ
	vojnike	ormane	tate	sela/mora	noći	devojke

- The accusative plural endings for feminine and neuter nouns are the same as the nominative plural, while for masculine nouns the plural ending **-и/i** in the nominative changes to **-е/e** in the accusative.

The accusative is formed with the following endings added to adjectives and pronouns:

Acc.	Singular		Plural				
	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	
Endings	Animate -ог/-ег Inanimate -и	-о	-а	-и/i	-а	-е	
Definite adj.	згодног zgodnog	згодні zgodni	згодно zgodno	згодну zgodnu	згодне zgodne	згодна zgodna	згодне zgodne
Demonstrative pronoun	овог ovog	овај ovaj	ово ovo	ову ty	ове te	ова ta	ове te
Possessive pronoun	мојег mog	мој toj	моје to	моју toju	моје	моја	моје
Interrogative pronoun	којег kog	који koji	које	коју koju	које	која	које
	чијег čijeg	чији čiji	чије čije	чију čiju	чије čije	чија čija	чије čije

- Definite adjectives and possessive, demonstrative and interrogative pronouns modifying masculine animate nouns have the ending **-ог/og** or **-ег/eg**:

Видео сам твог (твојег) Јована. **Video sam tvog (tvojeg) Jovana.** I saw your Jovan.

Ово дете има младог (млађег) тату. **Ovo dete ima mladog (mlađeg) tatu.** This child has a young (younger) father.

- Definite adjectives and possessive, demonstrative and interrogative pronouns when modifying inanimate masculine or neuter nouns have the same endings as in the nominative singular:

**Човек вози стари
аутомобил.** **Čovek vozi
stari automobil.** The man is driving
an old car.

**Који аутобус
чекате?** **Koji autobus
čekate?** Which bus are
you waiting for?

- Feminine definite adjectives and possessive, demonstrative and interrogative pronouns have the ending **-y/u** in the accusative singular:

**Момак је упознао
лепу девојку.** **Momak je upoznao
lepu devojku.** The young man
met a pretty girl.

**Чију си слику
купио?** **Čiju si sliku
kupio?** Whose painting did
you buy?

- Depending on whether the final consonant is soft or hard, neuter definite adjectives and demonstrative pronouns and possessive and interrogative pronouns have the endings **-o** or **-e** in the accusative singular:

**Идемо у моје
лепо село.** **Idemo u moje
lepo selo.** We are going to my
pretty village.

**За одмор идемо
на наше плаво
море.** **Za odmor idemo
na naše plavo
more.** We are going to our
blue sea for the
holidays.

**Где је њихово
село?** **Gde je njihovo
selo?** Where is their village?

- Endings for masculine and feminine genders in the accusative plural are **-e** and **-a** for neuter gender:

**Ми волимо
своје синове.** **Mi volimo
svoje sinove.** We love our sons.

**Ова деца имају
младе тате.** **Ova deca imaju
mlade tate.** These children have
young fathers.

**Куда иду наше
лепе девојке.** **Kuda idu naše
lepe devojke.** Where to are our
pretty girls going.

**Идемо у наша
лепа села.** **Idemo u naša
lepa sela.** We are going to our
pretty villages.

7.3.5 Vocative case**7.3.5.1** Uses of the vocative case

The vocative case is used when addressing someone directly, in person or in writing, and it usually applies to living beings – people and animals. The noun in the vocative stands independently of the other words in a sentence and is usually separated from them by a comma:

Мама, имамо ли хлеба?	Mama, imamo li hleba?	<i>Mum, do we have some bread?</i>
------------------------------	------------------------------	------------------------------------

Иване, јави се кући.	Ivane, javi se kući.	<i>Ivan, call home.</i>
-----------------------------	-----------------------------	-------------------------

When someone is addressed in writing, his or her name, title or rank is in the vocative, followed by a comma:

Драги пријатељу,	Dragi prijatelju,	<i>Dear friend,</i>
Поштовани	Poštovani	<i>Respected</i>
господине	gospodine	<i>Mr Mladenović,</i>
Младеновићу,	Mladenoviću,	

The vocative case is also used when calling out to someone:

Драгане!	Dragane!	<i>(Hey) Dragan!</i>
-----------------	-----------------	----------------------

This is often preceded by an exclamation: ‘Hey, Oi’, etc.

7.3.5.2 Formation of the vocative case

Masculine and neuter nouns remain the same in the vocative case as in the nominative. Plural nouns also use the nominative for the vocative case.

The vocative case differs from the nominative case in the following instances:

- 1 Masculine singular ending is -e after hard consonants:

Драги сине,	Dragi sine,	<i>Dear son,</i>
--------------------	--------------------	------------------

and -y/u after soft consonants:

Драги пријатељу,	Dragi prijatelju,	<i>Dear friend,</i>
Поштовани господине	Poštovani gospodine	<i>Respected</i>
Младеновићу,	Mladenoviću,	<i>Mr Mladenović,</i>

The following consonant changes occur before the -e ending:

-к/k to -ч/č -ц/c to -ч/č

-г/g to -ж/ž -х/h to -ш/š

отац – оче	otac – oče	father
Бог – Боже	Bog – Bože	God
човек – човече	čovek – čoveče	man

There are no changes to consonants occurring before the -y/u ending.

Some nouns ending in hard consonants may take either ending:

месар – месару/месаре!	mesar – mesaru/mesare!	Butcher!
клошар – клошару/клошаре!	klošar – klošaru/klošare!	Tramp!

- 2 Although many feminine and masculine nouns ending in an -a (second declension) remain as in the nominative:

мама – мама!	mama – mama!	Mum!
тата – тата!	tata – tata!	Dad!
Марија – Марија!	Marija – Marija!	Maria!
Лила – Лила!	Lila – Lila!	Lila!

some masculine and feminine names and nouns ending in -a (second declension) have the a replaced by an o:

мајка – мајко	majka – majko!	Mother!
Нада – Надо!	Nada – Nado!	Nada!
слуга – слуго!	sluga – slugo!	Judge!

- 3 Collective nouns with an -a ending also change to -o:

господа – господо!	gospoda – gospodo!	Gentlemen!
деца – децо!	deca – deco!	Children!
браћа – браћо!	braća – braćo!	Brothers!

- 4 Feminine nouns of three or more syllables ending in -ница/ica take the ending -нице/ice in the vocative singular:

комшиница – комшинице!	komšinica – komšinice!	Neighbour!
пријатељица – пријатељице!	prijateljica – prijateljice!	Girl-friend!

- 5 Feminine nouns ending in a consonant (third declension) have an **-и/и** added to the nominative singular:

Радости наша! Radosti naša! Our joy!

Definite adjectives in the vocative are the same as in the nominative.

7.3.6 Instrumental case

The instrumental case can be used with or without a preposition to indicate a person, thing or quality associated with the activity of a verb. The two ideas most often expressed with this case are that of company (with whom an action is being carried out) and that of means, manner, agent or instrument associated with the activity of the verb (by which means is an action being carried out).

Идемо колима. Idemo kolima. We're going by car.

7.3.6.1 Uses of the instrumental case

The instrumental case without prepositions has three usages:

- To indicate the instrument or means by which an action is accomplished: where in English the prepositions 'by', 'with' or 'by means of' would be used:

Дете једе кашиком. Dete jede kašikom. The child is eating with a spoon.

Радници су путовали возом. Radnici su putovali vozom. The workers travelled by train.

- To indicate a place in which an action was carried out:

Синоћ смо шетали градом. Sinoć smo šetali gradom. Last night we strolled through the town.

Деца трче улицом. Deca trče ulicom. The children are running along the street.

- When expressing a time-related activity, it can indicate that an action takes place regularly at a certain time, as well as indicating a period of time during which something happens:

Суботом идемо у куповину. Subotom idemo u kupovinu. On Saturdays we go shopping.

Данима су га чекали. Danima su ga čekali. They waited for him for days.

It can also indicate that an action will take or has taken place at a designated point in time:

Неки су заспали током представе.	Neki su zaspali tokom predstave.	Some fell asleep <i>in the course of</i> the show.
Крајем недеље идемо у Париз.	Krajem nedelje idemo u Pariz.	<i>At the end of</i> the week we're going to Paris.

Prepositions in the instrumental case are used with the following meanings:

- To indicate company:

са	sa	with
Ана иде у куповину са Златом.	Ana ide u kupovinu sa Zlatom.	Anna is going shopping <i>with</i> Zlata.

In this use, the person accompanying the subject is considered to be an active participant in the action expressed by the verb: both Anna and Zlata are going shopping.

- Descriptively, to indicate a feature or trait:

са	sa	with
Видео је девојку са смеђим очима.	Video je devojku sa smeđim očima.	He saw a girl <i>with</i> <i>brown eyes.</i>

In contrast to the previous use of **са/са**, here the preposition is followed by a description of the subject, and the object (brown eyes) is not an active participant in the action. The preposition **са/са** is nonetheless used as it describes the girl to be 'with brown eyes'. This can also be expressed using the genitive case:

Видео је девојку плаве косе.	Video je devojku plave kose.	He saw a girl <i>with</i> <i>blonde hair.</i>
---	---	--

- To indicate manner:

са	sa	with
Студенти су слушали професора са пажњом.	Studenti su slušali profesora sa pažnjom.	The students listened to the professor <i>attentively</i> (with attention).

This can also be expressed using an adverb:

Студенти су пажљиво слушали професора.	Studenti su pažljivo slušali profesora.	The students listened <i>carefully</i> to the professor.
---	--	--

The letter **с/s** (with) is often used on its own as a preposition and is interchangeable with **са/са**. However, in instances where the word following the preposition begins with any of the following letters: **с/s**, **ш/š**, **з/z** or **ж/ž**, the use of the full **са/са** preposition is required in order to avoid occurrence of double consonants. The same rule applies to the preposition **к(а)/к(а)** and its own set of consonants in the dative case.

- To indicate place:

за	za	behind
Жене су стајале једна за другом.	Žene su stajale jedna za drugom.	The women stood one behind the other.

This can also be expressed using the genitive case and the preposition **иза/iza** (behind):

Жене су стајале једна иза друге.	Žene su stajale jedna iza druge.	The women stood one behind the other.
међу	među	amongst/between
Међу путницима је било деце.	Među putnicima je bilo dece.	There were children amongst the passengers.

This can at times also be expressed using the genitive case and the preposition **између/između** (between).

над	nad	above
Авион лети над градом.	Avion leti nad gradom.	A plane is flying above the town.

This can also be expressed using the genitive case and the preposition **изнад/iznad** (above):

Авион лети изнад града.	Avion leti iznad grada.	A plane is flying above the town.
------------------------------------	------------------------------------	--------------------------------------

while the preposition **над/nad** (above) can be followed by the accusative with verbs of motion.

под	pod	under
Мачка је под столом.	Mačka je pod stolom.	The cat is under the table.

Singular:				
	Adjective	Noun		
<i>Masculine</i>	-ИМ	-ОМ	or	-ЕМ
	-им	-ом		-ем
		hard consonant ending		soft consonant ending
<i>Neuter</i>	-ИМ	-ОМ	or	-ЕМ
	-им	-ом		-ем
<i>Feminine</i>	-ОМ	-ОМ	or	-И
	-ом	-ом		-и
		nouns ending in -а		nouns ending in a consonant
			or	-Ю
				-ю
Plural:				
	Adjective	Noun		
<i>Masculine</i>	-ИМ	-ИМА		
	-им	-има		
<i>Neuter</i>	-ИМ	-ИМА		
	-им	-има		
<i>Feminine</i>	-ИМ	-АМА	or	-ИМА
	-им	-ама		-има
		nouns ending in -а		nouns ending in a consonant

7.3.7 Locative case

The locative case is used to indicate the location and space in which an action is carried out. It is the only case which is always used with a preposition because of which it is also called the prepositional case.

7.3.7.1 Uses of the locative case

This case is used with the following prepositions:

- **на/на** (on, on top of) and **-у/у** (in, inside of)

To indicate location:

Даљински управљач је на телевизору.	Daljinski upravljač je na televizoru.	The remote control is <i>on the TV</i> .
Деца су у базену.	Deca su u bazenu.	The children are <i>in the pool</i> .

To indicate time:

На почетку се нису добро слагали.	Na početku se nisu dobro slagali.	<i>At the beginning</i> , they didn't get on very well.
На крају дана сви су били уморни.	Na kraju dana svi su bili umorni.	<i>At the end of the day</i> , they were all tired.
У марту понекад још пада снег.	U martu ponekad još pada sneg.	Snow sometimes still falls <i>in March</i> .

To indicate means:

Ходали су на прстима да не би пробудили дете.	Hodali su na prstima da ne bi probudili dete.	They walked <i>on their toes</i> so as not to wake up the child.
--	--	--

To provide further information in a sentence when used with nouns, adjectives and verbs:

Захваљујемо се на вашем гостопримству.	Zahvaljujemo se na vašem gostoprimstvu.	We thank you <i>for your hospitality</i> .
---	--	--

The meaning of these two prepositions when followed by the locative differ from their meanings when used with verbs of motion and followed by the accusative (movement onto, into, on top of, inside of, etc.)

- **по/ро** (on, in, over, across, through, by)

To indicate movement over a whole surface or area or over only parts of a surface or area:

Данас смо се шетали по парку.	Danas smo se šetali po parku.	Today we strolled <i>through the park</i> .
Ко те је ударио по лицу?	Ko te je udario po licu?	Who hit you <i>in the face</i> ?

To indicate time:

Јавите нам се по повратку.	Javite nam se po povratku.	Call us <i>upon your return</i> .
-----------------------------------	-----------------------------------	-----------------------------------

To provide further information in a sentence when used with nouns, adjectives and verbs:

Преознаћу га по коси.	Prepoznaću ga po kosi.	I will recognise him <i>by his hair</i> .
------------------------------	-------------------------------	---

Србин је по националности.	Srbin је по nacionalnosti.	He is a Serb by nationality.
-----------------------------------	-----------------------------------	------------------------------

To indicate one's opinion or preference:

Какав је он човек по теби?	Kakav је он човек по теби?	What kind of a man is he according to you?
-----------------------------------	-----------------------------------	--

Изабрала је хаљину по свом укусу.	Izabrala је haljinu по svom ukusu.	She chose a dress according to her taste.
--	---	---

This preposition differs from the same one in the accusative where it is used with the meaning of picking up, fetching, collecting, etc.

- **о/о** (from, on, about, concerning, during, at)
Following verbs of communication and thought:

Разговарамо о нашем новом доктору.	Razgovaramo о нашем новом доктору.	We're talking about our new doctor.
---	---	-------------------------------------

To indicate means:

Мораћете да путујете о свом трошку.	Moraćete да putujete о svom трошку.	You will have to travel at your own expense.
--	--	--

To indicate a location, generally a place from which something is hanging:

Шешир виси о чивилуку.	Šešir visi о čiviluku.	The hat is hanging from a hat rack.
-------------------------------	-------------------------------	-------------------------------------

- **при/pri** (at, near, to, with, during, in possession of, having, busy with, in spite of)

To indicate the location of one object in relation to another:

Изградио је гаражу при кући.	Izgradio је гаражу при кући.	He built a garage attached to the house.
-------------------------------------	-------------------------------------	--

To indicate comparison of one object in relation to another:

Она није ништа при теби.	Ona nije ništa при теби.	She is nothing compared to you.
---------------------------------	---------------------------------	---------------------------------

To indicate simultaneous activity expressed by the locative deverbative (noun formed from a verb) and the main verb:

При изградњи моста наишли су на велике тешкоће.	Pri izgradnji mosta naišli су на велике teškoće.	During construction of the bridge they encountered great difficulties.
--	---	--

This preposition only occurs with the locative case.

- **према/према** (opposite, facing, in accordance with, in comparison with, suitable for):
To indicate location, where something is opposite that which is expressed by the noun in the locative:

**Седео је леђима Sedeo je leđima He sat with his
окренут према теби. okrenut prema tebi. back towards you.**

To indicate the equivalent of the English 'in accordance with' or 'therefore':

**Према томе, све Prema tome, sve Therefore, everything
ће бити у реду. će biti u redu. will be alright.**

This preposition occurs with the dative case as well where its meaning denotes direction.

In general, **у/у** (in) refers to closed spaces, spaces which have 'an inside', while **на/на** (on) refers to open spaces and expansive surfaces, both plateaux and water surfaces. The opposites of these two prepositions are **из/из** (from, out of) and **са/са** (from, off) respectively, both of which take the genitive case.

**Ми смо били у Mi smo bili u We were in the restaurant,
ресторану, да restoranu, da li were you at the station.
ли сте ви били ste vi bili na
на станици? stanicí?**

**Он је из града а On je iz grada He is from the city while she
она је са села. a ona je sa sela. is from the country (village).**

The locative case is used in reply to the following questions:

- 1 **О коме? O kome? About whom?
О, у, на чему? O, u, na čemu? About, in, on what?**

'In' and 'on' rarely relate to living things.

These two interrogatives have no plural form.

**О коме причате? O kome pričate? Whom are you
talking about?**

**Причамо о теби. Pričamo o tebi. We're talking
about you.**

**О чему причате? O čemu pričate? What are you
talking about?**

**Причамо о филму. Pričamo o filmu. We're talking about
the film.**

- 2 The following interrogatives agree both in number and in gender with the noun:

	About, in, on which?			About, in, on what kind?		
	(m)	(n)	(f)	(m)	(n)	(f)
sg. о, у, на	којем	којем	којој	каквом	каквом	каквој
	којем	којем	којој	kakvom	kakvom	kakvoj
pl. о, и, на		којим			каквим	
		којим			kakvim	

У којој школи **У којој школи** *In which school are you*
учите српски? **učite srpski?** *studying Serbian?*
На каквој плажи **Na kakvoj plaži** *What kind of beach*
сте били? **ste bili?** *were you on?*

	How big?			Whose?		
	(m)	(n)	(f)	(m)	(n)	(f)
sg. о, у, на	коликом	коликом	коликој	чијем	чијем	чијој
	kolikom	kolikom	kolikoј	čijem	čijem	čijoј
pl. о, и, на		коликим			чијим	
		kolikim			čijim	

У коликој кући **U kolikoј kući** *In how big a house do*
живите? **živite?** *you live?*
О чијем детету **O čijem detetu** *Whose child are you*
је реч? **je reč?** *talking about?*

7.3.7.2 Formation of the locative case

As in the dative case, alterations of certain consonants occur in both the singular and plural endings of the locative when followed by **-n/i**:

-к/к changes to **-ц/с**
-г/g **-з/z**
х/h **-с/s**

The locative singular is formed with the following endings added to nouns:

Singular:					
	Masculine		Neuter	Feminine	
	Consonant ending	-a ending	-o/-e	Consonant ending	-a ending
Loc.	орману	тати	селу/мору	ноћи/мисли	жени
	ormanu	tati	selu/moru	noći/mislīi	ženi

Note: Masculine nouns ending in a consonant and neuter nouns have a **-y/u** ending. All feminine nouns and masculine nouns ending in **-a** change to **-i/i**.

Plural:					
	Masculine		Neuter	Feminine	
	Consonant ending	-a ending	-o/-e	Consonant ending	-a ending
Loc.	-има	-ама		-има	-ама
	-ima	-ama		-ima	-ama

Note: The locative plural endings for masculine nouns, neuter nouns and feminine nouns ending in a consonant have the same ending **-има/-има**, while feminine and masculine nouns ending in **-a** have the ending **-ама/-ама**.

The locative is formed with the following endings added to adjectives and pronouns:

	Singular			Plural		
	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
Endings	-ом/-ем		-ој			-им
	-om/-em		-oj			-im
Definite adjective	згодном		згодној			згодним
	zgodnom		zgodnoj			zgodnim

	Singular			Plural		
	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
Demonstrative pronoun	ОВОМ		ОВОЈ		ОВИМ	
	ТОМ		ТОЈ		ТИМ	
	ОВОМ		ОВОЈ		ОВИМ	
	ТОМ		ТОЈ		ТИМ	
Possessive pronoun	МОЈЕМ		МОЈОЈ		МОЈИМ	
	(МОМ/Е)		МОЈОЈ		МОЈИМ	
	МОЈЕМ					
	(МОМ/Е)					
Interrogative pronoun	КОЈЕМ		КОЈОЈ		КОЈИМ	
	(КОМ/Е)		КОЈОЈ		КОЈИМ	
	КОЈЕМ					
	(КОМ/Е)					
	ЧИЈЕМ		ЧИЈОЈ		ЧИЈИМ	
	ЇИЈЕМ		ЇИЈОЈ		ЇИЈИМ	

7.4 Declension of nouns

The concept of declension is closely related to cases (see Section 7.3 Cases of nouns). The change in form of the noun through the cases is brought about by the addition of various endings to the stem of the noun. The stem of the noun is obtained by removing the ending from the genitive singular. However, the stem of a noun and its form in the nominative singular, as given in the dictionary, are often the same. Declensions are distinguished by the particular endings that are added to the stem of nouns as they move through the cases.

There are three main declensions.

The first declension

All animate and inanimate masculine nouns and neuter nouns belong to this declension, with the following exceptions:

- masculine nouns ending in **-а** in the nominative singular belong to the second declension (**деда/deda** etc.);
- some masculine nouns which are used to express endearment ending in **-о** and **-е** (**Иво/Иво, Владо/Vlado**, etc.) also belong to the second or third declension.

A distinction exists in this declension between hard and soft nouns.

Because of its **-a** endings in the genitive singular (see Section 7.3 Cases of nouns), this declension is referred to as the **A** declension.

The second declension

The feminine noun **мати/mati** and all feminine nouns, both hard and soft, ending in **-a**, as well as masculine nouns ending in **-a**, belong to this declension. Because of its **-e** ending in the genitive singular, this declension is referred to as the **E** declension.

The third declension

All feminine nouns ending in a consonant and the feminine noun **кћи/kći** belong to this declension. This declension includes nouns ending in **-ост/ost** and those ending in **-ад/ad**.

Because of its **-и/i** ending in the genitive singular, this declension is referred to as the **И/I** declension.

7.4.1 Masculine and neuter nouns

Masculine and neuter nouns belong to the first declension. This declension is also referred to as the **A** declension because of the **-a** ending of nouns in the genitive singular.

In this declension there exists a distinction between the hard and soft consonant endings of the noun.

The soft consonants include: **ј/j, љ/lj, њ/nj, џ/c, ћ/ć, ч/č, ш/š, ђ/đ, џ/dž** and **ж/ž**. The hard consonants include: **м/m, р/r, б/b, ф/f, в/v, н/n, т/t, д/d, п/p, л/l, к/k, г/g, с/s з/z** and **х/h**.

Nouns in this declension include masculine nouns ending in a consonant, in **-o** and in **-e** in the nominative singular:

Masculine (singular)

прозор	prozor	window
преводилац*	prevodilac*	interpreter/translator
војник**	vojnik**	soldier

* Some masculine nouns ending in **-лац/lac** in the nominative singular have the letter **-л/l** replaced by the letter **-o** in all cases except the genitive plural. A fleeting **a** is inserted here as the noun in the nominative singular ends in a double consonant. This insertion takes place in all cases of double consonant endings except **ст/st, зд/zd, шт/št** and **жд/žd**. This fleeting **a** is present only in the nominative singular, the vocative singular and the genitive plural. Elsewhere the case endings allow the presence of two consonants.

** Nouns ending in **-к/k, -г/g, -х/h** in the nominative singular change to **ц/c, з/z** and **-с/s** endings respectively in plural forms of the nominative, dative, vocative, instrumental and locative cases, while the vocative singular takes **ч/č, ж/ž** and **ш/š**, respectively.

ниво	nivo	level
решо	rešo	hotplate
парк*	park*	park
такси**	taksi**	taxi

(Masculine nouns ending in **-a** in the nominative singular, and some masculine nouns ending in **-o** and **-e** (endings used with expressions of endearment), may belong to the second or third declensions.)

* Most single-syllable nouns acquire the infixes **-ев/ев** or **-ов/ов** before the plural endings in this declension. In general, nouns ending in a soft consonant in the nominative acquire the **-ев/ев** infix while those ending in a hard consonant acquire the **-ов/ов** ending. Some nouns ending in **-o** in the nominative singular acquire the **-ов/ов** ending in the plural forms.

** Nouns ending in **-и/i** or **-у/u** are generally of foreign origin. Those ending in **-и/i** acquire a **-ј/j** infix before the case endings.

All neuter nouns belong to this declension:

Neuter (singular):

село	selo	village
поље	polje	field
доба	doba	era, season

Several different endings may occur in the following cases depending on the noun being declined:

In the vocative singular:

- Nouns whose stem ends in a hard consonant, a short **-e** or an **-o** (changed from **л/l**, see Section 4.1.6 Change of **л/l** to **-o**) have an **-e** ending:

Госте! (гост)	Goste! (gost)	(Hey) guest!
Ђорђе! (Ђорђе)	Đorđe! (Đorđe)	(Hey) George!
Воле! (во)	Vole! (vo)	(Hey) ox!

- Nouns whose stem ends in a soft consonant, and those with a long accented **-e** and **-o**, have an **-у/u** ending:

Учительу! (учитель)	Učitelju! (učitelj)	(Hey) teacher!
Аташеу! (аташе)	Atašeu! (ataše)	(Hey) attache!
Бироу! (биру)	Birou! (biro)	(Hey) bureau!

- Nouns whose stem ends in a short -o have an -o ending:

Данко! (Данко) Danko! (Danko) (Hey) Danko!

Миленко! (Миленко) Milenko! (Milenko) (Hey) Milenko!

Златко! (Златко) Zlatko! (Zlatko) (Hey) Zlatko!

- Foreign names and surnames ending in -ац/ac, -ев/ev, -ов/ov and -ин/in and neuter nouns have the same ending as in the nominative:

Џими! (Џими) Džimi! (Džimi) (Hey) Jimmy!

Бајац! (Бајац) Bajac! (Bajac) (Hey) Bajac!

Море! (море) More! (more) (Hey) sea!

- Nouns (not names) ending in -ац/ac change these two sounds to че/če:

Преводиоче! (преводилац) Prevodioče! (prevodilac) (Hey) translator!

Гледаоче! (гледалац) Gledaoče! (gledalac) (Hey) viewer!

In the instrumental singular:

- Nouns whose stem ends in a hard consonant, or whose final syllable contains -e, have an -ом/om ending:

ГОСТОМ gostom (with) a guest

СЕЛОМ selom (with/by way of) the village

- Nouns whose stem ends in a soft consonant generally have an -ем/em ending:

УЧИТЕЉЕМ (учитељ) učiteljem (učitelj) (with) the teacher

ЂОРЂЕМ (Ђорђе) Đorđem (Đorđe) (with) George

ПЕВАЧЕМ (певач) pevačem (pevač) (with) the singer

ПОЉЕМ (поље) poljem (polje) (with/by way of) the field

- However, some nouns with an e before the soft consonant have an -ом/om ending:

ЈЕЖОМ (јеж) ježom (jež) (with) a hedgehog

In the genitive plural:

- Some masculine nouns denoting quantity have the ending **-и/i**:

пари	pari	(how many) pairs
сати	sati	(how many) hours
месеци	meseci	(how many) months

- The masculine nouns **гост/gost** (guest), **нокат/nokat*** (finger/toe nail), **прст/prst** (finger), and sometimes **уста/usta**** (mouth) end in **-ију/iju**:

гостију	gostiju	(how many) guests
ноктију	noktiju	(how many) fingernails
прсцју	prstiju	(how many) fingers

* The **a** drops out when the endings are added.

** **Уста/usta** (mouth) like **врата/vrata** are *pluralia tantums*, meaning they only have a plural form.

- Most neuter nouns end in **-а**:

села	sela	(how many) villages
неба	neba	(how many) skies
говеда	goveda	(how many) cattle
имена*	imena*	(how many) names

* Certain neuter nouns ending in **-е** have the following infixes through the cases:

име	им + ен +	ime	im + ен +	name
племе	плем + ен +	pleme	plem + ен +	tribe
презиме	презим + ен +	prezime	prezim + ен +	surname
семе	сем + ен +	seme	sem + ен +	seed
време	врем + ен +	vreme	vrem + ен +	time
дугме	дүгм + ет +	dugme	dugm + ет +	button
небо	неб + ес +	nebo	neb + ес +	skies
чүдо	чүд + ес +	čudo	čud + ес +	miracle
подне	подн + ев +	podne	podn + ев +	noon

The endings for the first declension are as follows:

	Singular		Plural	
	Masculine	Neuter	Masculine	Neuter
Nom.	consonant	-o/o	-и/i	-а/a
	-o/o	-e/e		
	-e/e			
Gen.	-а/a	-а/a	-а/a	-а/a
			-и/i	-и/i
			-ију/iju	-ију/iju
Dat.	-у/u	-у/u	-има/ima	-има/ima
Acc.	consonant/-а	-o/o	-e/e	-а/a
	-o/o	-e/e		
	-e/e			
Voc.	-e/y/u	-o/o	-и/i	-а/a
	-o/o	-e/e		
	consonant			
Inst.	-ом/om	-ом/om	-има/ima	-има/ima
	-ем/em	-ем/em		
Loc.	-у/u	-у/u	-има/ima	-има/ima

7
Nouns

First declension – **A** declension

Singular

	Masculine		Neuter			
	Hard	Soft	Hard	Soft		
	Animate	Inanimate	Animate	Inanimate		
	soldier	window	lover (of something)	log	village	field
Nom.	војник <i>vojnik</i>	прозор <i>prozor</i>	љубитељ <i>ljubitelj</i>	пањ <i>panj</i>	село <i>selo</i>	поље <i>polje</i>
Gen.	војника <i>vojnika</i>	прозора <i>prozora</i>	љубитеља <i>ljubitelja</i>	пања <i>panja</i>	села <i>sela</i>	поља <i>polja</i>
Dat.	војнику <i>vojniku</i>	прозору <i>prozoru</i>	љубитељу <i>ljubitelju</i>	пању <i>panju</i>	селу <i>selu</i>	пољу <i>polju</i>
Acc.	војника <i>vojnika</i>	прозор <i>prozor</i>	љубитеља <i>ljubitelja</i>	пањ <i>panj</i>	село <i>selo</i>	поље <i>polje</i>
Voc.	војниче <i>vojniče</i>	прозоре <i>prozore</i>	љубитељу <i>ljubitelju</i>	пању <i>panju</i>	село <i>selo</i>	поље <i>polje</i>
Inst.	војником <i>vojnikom</i>	прозором <i>prozorom</i>	љубитељем <i>ljubiteljem</i>	пањем <i>panjem</i>	селом <i>selom</i>	пољем <i>poljem</i>
Loc.	војнику <i>vojniku</i>	прозору <i>prozoru</i>	љубитељу <i>ljubitelju</i>	пању <i>panju</i>	селу <i>selu</i>	пољу <i>polju</i>

First declension – A declension

Singular

	Masculine		Neuter			
	Hard		Soft			
	Animate	Inanimate	Animate	Inanimate		
	eagle	interview	hunter	judges/jury	name	button
Nom.	орáo	интервју	ловац	жири	име	дугме
	oráo	intervju	lovac	žiri	ime	dugme
Gen.	орла	интервјуá	ловца	жирија	имена	дугмета
	orla	intervjua	lovca	žirija	imena	dugmeta
Dat.	орлу	интервјуу	ловцу	жирију	имену	дугмету
	orlu	intervjuu	lovcu	žiriju	imenu	dugmetu
Acc.	орла	интервју	ловца	жири	име	дугме
	orla	intervju	lovca	žiri	ime	dugme
Voc.	орле	интервјуу	ловче	жирију	име	дугме
	orle	intervjuu	lovče	žiriju	ime	dugme
Inst.	орлом	интервјуом	ловцем	жиријем	именом	дугметом
	orlom	intervjuom	lovcem	žirijem	imenom	dugmetom
Loc.	орлу	интервјуу	ловцу	жирију	имену	дугмету
	orlu	intervjuu	lovcu	žiriju	imenu	dugmetu

7 Nouns

First declension – A declension

Plural

		Masculine		Neuter		
		Hard	Soft	Hard	Soft	
		Animate	Inanimate	Animate	Inanimate	
		soldiers	windows	lovers (of something)	logs	villages fields
Nom.	војници	прозори	љубитељи	пањеви	села	поља
	vojnici	prozori	ljubitelji	ranjevi	sela	polja
Gen.	војника	прозора	љубитеља	пањева	села	поља
	vojnika	prozora	ljubitelja	ranjeva	sela	polja
Dat.	војницима	прозорима	љубитељима	пањевима	селима	пољима
	vojnica	prozorima	ljubiteljima	ranjevima	selima	poljima
Acc.	војнике	прозоре	љубитеље	пањеве	села	поља
	vojnike	prozore	ljubitelje	ranjeve	sela	polja
Voc.	војници	прозори	љубитељи	пањеви	села	поља
	vojnici	prozori	ljubitelji	ranjevi	sela	polja
Inst.	војницима	прозорима	љубитељима	пањевима	селима	пољима
	vojnica	prozorima	ljubiteljima	ranjevima	selima	poljima
Loc.	војницима	прозорима	љубитељима	пањевима	селима	пољима
	vojnica	prozorima	ljubiteljima	ranjevima	selima	poljima

First declension – **A** declension

Plural

	Masculine		Neuter			
	Hard		Soft			
	Animate	Inanimate	Animate	Inanimate		
	eagles	interviews	hunters	judges/juries	names	buttons
Nom.	орлови	интервјуи	ловци	жирији	имена	дугмета
	orlovi	intervjui	lovci	žiriji	imena	dugmeta
Gen.	орлова	интервјуа	ловаца	жирија	имена	дугмета
	orlova	intervjua	lovaca	žirija	imena	dugmeta
Dat.	орловима	интервјуима	ловцима	жиријима	именима	дугметима
	orlovima	intervjuima	lovcima	žirijima	imenima	dugmetima
Acc.	орлове	интервјуе	ловце	жирије	имена	дугмета
	orlove	intervjue	lovce	žirije	imena	dugmeta
Voc.	орлови	интервјуи	ловци	жирији	имена	дугмета
	orlovi	intervjui	lovci	žiriji	imena	dugmeta
Inst.	орловима	интервјуима	ловцима	жиријима	именима	дугметима
	orlovima	intervjuima	lovcima	žirijima	imenima	dugmetima
Loc.	орловима	интервјуима	ловцима	жиријима	именима	дугметима
	orlovima	intervjuima	lovcima	žirijima	imenima	dugmetima

7.4.2 Feminine and masculine nouns ending in -a and the noun **мати/mati**

Feminine and masculine nouns ending in -a belong to the second declension. This declension is also referred to as the E declension because of the -e endings of nouns in the genitive singular. There are no hard or soft consonant distinctions in this declension, nor are there any animate/inanimate endings.

The following types of nouns belong to this declension:

- All common nouns of feminine gender with an -a ending.
- The feminine noun **мати/mati** (mother), which takes the form **матер/mater** through the cases.
- A small number of common nouns of masculine gender with an -a ending. Although declining as feminine nouns, these nouns are referred to as masculine nouns in the singular and feminine nouns in the plural. These nouns generally refer to masculine animates:

старешина **starešina** officer, chief

вођа **vođa** leader

судија **sudija** judge

слуга **sluga** servant

младожења **mladoženja** bridegroom

- Proper feminine and masculine names and surnames ending in -a:

Нада **Nada** Nada (female)

Никола **Nikola** Nikola (male)

- Nouns declining as feminine but applicable to both genders, ending in -a:

луталица **lutalica** wanderer

пијаница **pijanica** drunk

издајица **izdajica** traitor

- Masculine nouns of foreign origin ending in **-ист/ist**, **-т/t** to which the letter **-a** has been added, because of which they follow the second declension in the singular, while joining the first declension in the plural:

спортиста **sportista** sportsman

економиста **ekonomista** economist

туриста **turista** tourist

демократа **demokrata** democrat

- Nouns expressing endearment in both genders, ending in **-a**:

дека **deka** grandpa (m)

меда **meda** teddy bear (m)

- Collective nouns, which are plural in meaning but have a singular form, ending in **-a**:

господа **gospoda** gentry

живина **živina** poultry

Several different endings may occur in the following cases depending on the noun being declined:

In the dative and locative singular:

- The majority of nouns have an **-и/i** ending:

кући **kući** (to/on) the house

другарици **drugarici** (to/about) the girl-friend

деди **dedi** (to/about) grandfather

- Nouns denoting names of places with adjectival endings have an **-ој/oј** ending:

Енглеској **Engleskoј** (to/in) England

Мађарској **Mađarskoј** (to/in) Hungary

In the vocative singular:

- The noun **мати/mati** (mother) has an **-и/i** ending;
- Most nouns and bisyllabic nouns ending in **-ица/ica** have an **-о** ending:

Птицо! (птица) **Ptico! (ptica)** (Hey) bird!

Жено! (жена) **Ženo! (žena)** (Hey) woman!

Слуго! (слуга) **Slugo! (sluga)** (Hey) servant!

- Proper nouns with short accents and names of places ending in **-ска/ska**, **-чка/čka**, **-шка/ška** have the ending **-а**:

Лила! (Лила) **Lila! (Lila)** (Hey) Lila!

Марија! (Марија) **Marija! (Marija)** (Hey) Marija!

Мађарска!
(Мађарска) **Mađarska!**
(Mađarska) (Hey) Hungary!

- While some names of places ending in **-ка/ka** have the ending **-о**:

Лико! (Лика) **Liko! (Lika)** (Hey) Lika!

- Nouns of more than two syllables ending in **-ица/ica** have the ending **-е**:

луталице! (луталица) **lutalice! (lutalica)** (Hey) wanderer!

пијанице! (пијаница) **pijanice! (pijanice)** (Hey) drunkard!

луткице! (луткица) **lutkice! (lutkica)** (Hey) doll! (dim.)

In the genitive plural:

- Most nouns, including those ending in consonants other than **-ст/st**, **-шт/št**, **-шч/šč**, **-шћ/šć**, **-зд/zd** and **-жд/žd**, where a fleeting a has been inserted, have an **-а** ending:

кућа (кућа) **kuća (kuća)** (without) houses

судија (судија) **sudija (sudija)** (without) judges

пијаница (пијанице) **pijanica (pijanica)** (without) drunkards

жртва (жртва) **žrtava (žrtva)** (without) victims

земаља (земља) **zemalja (zemlja)** (without) countries

- Nouns, the stems of which end in a cluster of consonants, but are without the insertion of a fleeting a, have an **-и/i** ending:

фунти (фунта) **funti (funta)** (without) pounds

лопти (лопта) **lopti (lopta)** (without) balls

молби (молба) **molbi (molba)** (without) applications

мајки (мајка) **majki (majka)** (without) mothers

тајни (тајна) **tajni (tajna)** (without) secrets

- The nouns **рука/ruka** (hand), **нога/noga** (leg), **слуга/sluga** (servant) have a **-у/u** ending:

руку (рука) **ruku (ruka)** (without) arms

ногу (нога) **nogu (noga)** (without) legs

The endings for the second declension are as follows:

	Singular		Plural	
	Masculine	Feminine	Masculine	Feminine
Nom.	-а/а	-а/а -и/и		-е/е
Gen.		-е/е		-а/а -ү/ү -и/и
Dat.	-и/и	-и/и -ој/ој		-ама
Acc.		-ү/ү		-е/е
Voc.		-а/а -е/е -о/о -и/и		-е/е
Inst.		-ом/ом		-ама
Loc.	-и/и	-и/и -ој/ој		-ама

7
Nouns

Second declension – E declension

Singular

	Feminine			Masculine		
	woman	squirrel	hand	mother	tourist	slave
Nom.	жена <i>žena</i>	веверица <i>veverica</i>	рука <i>ruka</i>	мати <i>mati</i>	түриста <i>turista</i>	слуга <i>sluga</i>
Gen.	жене <i>žene</i>	веверице <i>veverice</i>	руке <i>ruke</i>	матере <i>matere</i>	түристе <i>turiste</i>	слуге <i>sluge</i>
Dat.	жени <i>ženi</i>	веверици <i>veverici</i>	руци <i>ruci</i>	матери <i>materi</i>	түристи <i>turisti</i>	слуги <i>slugi</i>
Acc.	жену <i>ženu</i>	веверицу <i>vevericu</i>	руку <i>ruku</i>	матер <i>mater</i>	түристу <i>turistu</i>	слугу <i>slugu</i>
Voc.	жено <i>ženo</i>	веверице <i>veverice</i>	руко <i>ruko</i>	мати <i>mati</i>	түристо <i>turisto</i>	слуго <i>slugo</i>
Inst.	женом <i>ženom</i>	веверицом <i>vevericom</i>	руком <i>rukom</i>	матером <i>materom</i>	түристом <i>turistom</i>	слугом <i>slugom</i>
Loc.	жени <i>ženi</i>	веверици <i>veverici</i>	руци <i>ruci</i>	матери <i>materi</i>	түристи <i>turisti</i>	слуги <i>slugi</i>

Second declension – E declension

Plural

	Feminine				Masculine	
	woman	squirrel	hand	mother	tourist	slave
Nom.	жене	веверице	руке	матере	туристи/turisti	слуге
	žene	veverice	ruke	matere	First declension	sluge
Gen.	жена	веверица	руку	матера		слугу
	žene	veverice	ruke	matera		sluge
Dat.	женама	веверицама	рукама	матерама		слугама
	ženama	vevericama	rukama	materama		slugama
Acc.	жене	веверице	руке	матере		слуге
	žene	veverice	ruke	matere		sluge
Voc.	жене	веверице	руке	матере		слуге
	žene	veverice	ruke	matere		sluge
Inst.	женама	веверицама	рукама	матерама		слугама
	ženama	vevericama	rukama	materama		slugama
Loc.	женама	веверицама	рукама	матерама		слугама
	ženama	vevericama	rukama	materama		slugama

7.4.3 Feminine nouns ending in a consonant, in -o, -ост/ost or -ад/ad, and the noun кћи/kći

The third declension is also referred to as the **И/І** declension because of the **-и/і** endings of nouns in the genitive singular. There are no hard or soft consonant distinctions in this declension, nor are there any animate/inanimate endings.

The following types of nouns belong to this declension:

- Feminine nouns ending in a consonant in the nominative singular:

ствар **stvar** thing

љубав **ljubav** love

- Feminine nouns ending in -o:

мисао **misao** thought

со **so** salt

- Abstract feminine nouns ending in -ост/ost:

милост **milost** mercy

стварност **stvarnost** reality

- Collective feminine nouns ending in -ад/ad:

телад **telad** calves

јагњад **jagnjad** lambs

- The feminine noun **кћи/kći** (daughter).

Several different endings may occur in the following cases depending on the noun being declined:

In the nominative and accusative singular:

- All the nouns have a consonant ending except for **кћи/kći**, **мисао/misao** and **со/so**:

љубав **ljubav** love

ствар **stvar** thing

- The noun **кћи/kći** has two forms in the nominative -**кћи/kći** and **кћер/kćer**:

кћи **kći** daughter

кћер **kćer** daughter

- The nouns **мисао/misao** and **со/so** end with the letter -o in the nominative singular which reverts to **л/l** in its stem and through the cases.

In the instrumental singular:

- The majority of nouns have an **-и/i** ending, particularly when used with a preposition:

са ствари sa stvari (with) a thing

са мисли sa misli (with) a thought

- For nouns used without a preposition and those whose stem ends in **ч/č, ж/ž, ш/š, с/s, з/z, р/r**, the **-и/i** ending can be replaced by **-ју/ju*** or **-у/u**:

речи reči (with) a word

речју rečju (with) a word

* In the instrumental singular, nouns whose stem ends in the consonants **-б/b, -в/v, -м/m** or **-п/p** have the ending **-љу/lju** while those ending in the letters **-л/l, -н/n, -т/t, -д/d** change to **-љу/lju, -њу/nju, -ћу/ću** and **-ђу/dju** respectively.

љубави/љубављу ljubavi/ljubavlju (with) love

мисли/мишљу* misli/mišlju* (with) a thought

соли/сољу soli/solju (with) salt

младости/младошћу* mladosti/mladošču* (with) youth

* The **-с/s** changes to **-ш/š** before the acquired ending.

In the genitive plural:

- Most nouns have an **-и/i** ending:

младости (младост) mladosti (mladost) (without) youth

радости (радост) radosti (radost) (without) joy

жалости (жалост) žalosti (žalost) (without) sorrow

соли (соли) soli (so) (without) salt

мисли (мисли) misli (misao) (without) thoughts

телади (телад) teladi (telad) (without) calves

- The nouns **очи/оці***, **уши/уші***, **кости/kosti**, have a **-ију/іју** ending:

очију (очи) оціју (оці) (without) eyes

ушију (уши) ушіју (уші) (without) ears

костију (кости) костіју (кости) (without) bones

* These nouns have their singular form in the neuter gender which declines in the first declension in the singular.

The endings for the third declension are as follows:

	Singular	Plural
	Feminine	
Nom.	consonant	-и/і
Gen.	-и/і	-и/і -ију/іју
Dat.	-и/і	-има/іма
Acc.	consonant	-и/і
Voc.		-и/і
Inst.	-и/і -ју/ју -у/у -љу/љу	-има/іма
Loc.	-и/і	-има/іма

Third declension – **И/И** declension

Feminine singular

	thing	thought	word	daughter	hen
Nom.	ствар	мисао	реч	кћи/кћер	кокош
	<i>stvar</i>	<i>misao</i>	<i>reč</i>	<i>kći</i>	<i>kokoš</i>
Gen.	ствари	мисли	речи	кћери	кокоши
	<i>stvari</i>	<i>misli</i>	<i>reči</i>	<i>kćeri</i>	<i>kokoši</i>
Dat.	ствари	мисли	речи	кћери	кокоши
	<i>stvari</i>	<i>misli</i>	<i>reči</i>	<i>kćeri</i>	<i>kokoši</i>
Acc.	ствар	мисао	реч	кћи/кћер	кокош
	<i>stvar</i>	<i>misao</i>	<i>reč</i>	<i>kći/kćer</i>	<i>kokoš</i>
Voc.	ствари	мисли	речи	кћери	кокоши
	<i>stvari</i>	<i>misli</i>	<i>reči</i>	<i>kćeri</i>	<i>kokoši</i>
Inst.	ствари	мисли/мишљу	речи/речју	кћери/кћерју	кокоши/кокошју
	<i>stvari</i>	<i>misli/mišlju</i>	<i>reči/rečju</i>	<i>kćeri/kćerju</i>	<i>kokoši/kokošju</i>
Loc.	ствари	мисли	речи	кћери	кокоши
	<i>stvari</i>	<i>misli</i>	<i>reči</i>	<i>kćeri</i>	<i>kokoši</i>

Third declension – **И/И** declension

Feminine plural

	thing	thought	word	daughter	hen	ears
Nom.	ствари <i>stvari</i>	мисли <i>misli</i>	речи <i>reči</i>	кћери <i>kćeri</i>	кокоши <i>kokoši</i>	уши <i>uši</i>
Gen.	ствари <i>stvari</i>	мисли <i>misli</i>	речи <i>reči</i>	кћери <i>kćeri</i>	кокоши/кокошију <i>kokoši/kokošiju</i>	ушију <i>ušiju</i>
Dat.	стварима <i>stvarima</i>	мислима <i>mislima</i>	речима <i>rečima</i>	кћерима <i>kćerima</i>	кокошима <i>kokošima</i>	ушима <i>ušima</i>
Acc.	ствари <i>stvari</i>	мисли <i>misli</i>	речи <i>reči</i>	кћери <i>kćeri</i>	кокоши <i>kokoši</i>	уши <i>uši</i>
Voc.	ствари <i>stvari</i>	мисли <i>misli</i>	речи <i>reči</i>	кћери <i>kćeri</i>	кокоши <i>kokoši</i>	уши <i>uši</i>
Inst.	стварима <i>stvarima</i>	мислима <i>mislima</i>	речима <i>rečima</i>	кћерима <i>kćerima</i>	кокошима <i>kokošima</i>	ушима <i>ušima</i>
Loc.	стварима <i>stvarima</i>	мислима <i>mislima</i>	речима <i>rečima</i>	кћерима <i>kćerima</i>	кокошима <i>kokošima</i>	ушима <i>ušima</i>

7.4.4 Declension of irregular nouns

Nouns with irregular stems and endings have irregular declensions:

1 Infixes in **-ов/ov** and **-ев/ev**:

Most monosyllabic masculine nouns, with the exception of **дан/dan** (day), **коњ/konj** (horse), **зуб/zub** (tooth), **сат/sati** (meaning 'hour' and not 'clock', which does have the infix **-ов/ov**), and several others, have in the plural declension the following infixes added to their stem preceding the regular plural case ending: **-ов/ov** added to hard consonants:

град – градови/grad – gradovi (town),

врх – врхови/vrh – vrhovi (top), etc.

and **-ев/ev** added to soft consonants:

муж – мужеви/muž – muževi (husband), **пуж – пужеви/puž – puževi** (snail), **краљ – краљеви/kralj – kraljevi** (king), etc.

The declension of these nouns in the singular is regular in the first declension:

	Singular		Plural	
	Hard	Soft	Hard	Soft
Nom.	град	пуж	градови	пужеви
	grad	puž	gradovi	puževi
Gen.	града	пужа	градова	пужева
	grada	puža	gradova	puževa
Dat.	граду	пужу	градовима	пужевима
	gradu	pužu	gradovima	puževima
Acc.	град	пужа	градове	пужеве
	grad	puža	gradove	puževe
Voc.	граде	пужу	градови	пужеви
	grade	pužu	gradovi	puževi
Inst.	градом	пужем	градовима	пужевима
	gradom	pužem	gradovima	puževima
Loc.	граду	пужу	градовима	пужевима
	gradu	pužu	gradovima	puževima

2 Infixes in **-ен/en** and **-ет/et**:

Some neuter nouns ending in -e have the following infixes added to the stem in the singular in the genitive, dative, instrumental and locative cases, and in all cases in the plural:

-ен/en:

име/ime (name), **время/vremya** (time/weather), **племя/plemya** (tribe), **плечо/plecho** (shoulder), **семя/semya** (seed), etc.

-ет/et:

дугме/dugme (button), **теле/tele** (calf), **пиле/pile** (chick) and **дрво/drvo** (tree or wood) which has two plurals with different meanings. The one meaning 'tree' has the above infix.

	Singular		Plural	
	name	button	name	button
Nom.	име	дугме	имена	дугмета
	ime	dugme	imena	dugmeta
Gen.	имена	дугмета	имена	дугмета
	imena	dugmeta	imena	dugmeta
Dat.	имену	дугмету	именима	дугметима
	imenu	dugmetu	imenima	dugmetima
Acc.	име	дугме	имена	дугмета
	ime	dugme	imena	dugmeta
Voc.	име	дугме	имена	дугмета
	ime	dugme	imena	dugmeta
Inst.	именом	дугметом	именима	дугметима
	imenom	dugmetom	imenima	dugmetima
Loc.	имену	дугмету	именима	дугметима
	imenu	dugmetu	imenima	dugmetima

The noun **дете/dete** (child) only declines in the singular, when it declines in the same way as **дугме/dugme** (button).

3 Infixes in **-ec/es**:

Some neuter nouns ending in **-o** (**небо/небо** (sky), **чудо/чудо** (miracle, wonder)) have this infix added in the plural form only:

	Singular	Plural
	sky	skies
Nom.	небо	небеса
	нево	небеса
Gen.	неба	небеса
	нева	небеса
Dat.	небу	небесима
	неви	небесима
Acc.	небо	небеса
	нево	небеса
Voc.	небо	небеса
	нево	небеса
Inst.	небом	небесима
	невом	небесима
Loc.	небу	небесима
	неви	небесима

- 4 Nouns formed from verbs, where the ending **-лац/lac** replaces the infinitive ending:

читалац/čitalac (reader) **преводилац/prevodilac** (interpreter)
руководилац/rukovodilac (leader), etc.

have an irregular declension where the ending **-лац/lac** appears only in the nominative singular and the genitive plural:

	Singular	Plural
	reader	readers
Nom.	читалац čitalac	читаоци čitaoci
Gen.	читаоца čitaoca	читалаца čitalaca
Dat.	читаоцу čitaocu	читаоцима čitaocima
Acc.	читаоца čitaoca	читаоце čitaoce
Voc.	читаоче čitaoče	читаоци čitaoci
Inst.	читаоцем čitaocem	читаоцима čitaocima
Loc.	читаоцу čitaocu	читаоцима čitaocima

- 5 Nouns ending in **-ин/ин** which refer to a person belonging to a certain place, nationality, religion, etc. drop the **-ин/ин** ending in the plural stem. The singular declension is regular:

	Singular	Plural
	Serb	Serbs
Nom.	Србин Srbin	Срби Srbi
Gen.	Србина Srbina	Србе Srbe
Dat.	Србину Srbinu	Србима Srbima
Acc.	Србина Srbina	Србе Srbe
Voc.	Србине Srbine	Срби Srbi
Inst.	Србином Srbinom	Србима Srbima
Loc.	Србину Srbinu	Србима Srbima

- 6 **брат/brat** (brother) is declined regularly in the singular in the first declension. The plural form is **браћа/braća** and it declines as a regular feminine noun in the second declension.
- 7 **човек/čovek** (man) has a singular only. Preceded by the numbers 2, 3 and 4, it declines as the genitive singular for masculine nouns in the first declension.

In the plural (and after and including the number 5) **човек/čovek** (man) becomes **људи/ljudi** (people), which also belongs to the first declension, with an **-и/i** ending in the genitive plural.

Pronouns

Pronouns are words used to replace nouns, adjectives and numbers. They have gender and number, as well as declension.

A pronoun can be any of the following:

- 1 Personal
- 2 Reflexive
- 3 Possessive
- 4 Demonstrative
- 5 Relative
- 6 Interrogative
- 7 Indefinite
- 8 Negative
- 9 Universal
- 10 Compounded

The following behave as nouns:

- 1 Personal pronouns
- 2 Reflexive pronouns
- 3 Demonstrative pronouns
- 4 Interrogative pronouns – **ко/ко** (who?) and **шта/шта** (what?)
- 5 Indefinite pronouns – **неко/неко** (someone)
нешто/нешто (something)
ико/ико (anyone)
ишта/iшта (anything) etc.
- 6 Negative pronouns – **нико/нико** (no-one)
ништа/niшта (nothing) etc.

The following pronouns replace adjectives and numbers and answer to the questions: what kind? and which?

- 1 Possessive pronouns
- 2 Demonstrative pronouns (these can also replace nouns)
- 3 Interrogative pronouns – **који/који** (which?)
какав/kakav (what kind?)
чији/čiji (whose?)
- 4 Indefinite pronouns – **неки/neki** (some)
некакав/nekakav (some kind)
нечији/nečiji (someone's)
икоји/ikoji (any one)
икакав/ikakav (any kind)
ичији/ičiji (anyone's) etc.
- 5 Negative pronouns – **никоји/nikoji** (no-one)
никакав/nikakav (no kind)
ничији/ničiji (no-one's) etc.

Some pronouns have the same form for all three genders:

- 1 Personal pronouns – **ја/ја** (I)
ти/ti (you)
ми/mi (we)
ви/vi (you, pl.)
- 2 Reflexive pronouns – **се/se** (self)
- 3 Interrogative pronouns – **ко/ко** (who?)
шта/šta (what?)

The following pronouns have different suffixes denoting the different genders:

- 1 Personal pronouns – **он/on** (he)
она/она (she)
оно/оно (it)
- 2 Possessive pronouns – **мој/мој** (my, m)
моја/моја (my, f)
моје/моје (my, n)
- 3 Demonstrative pronouns – **тај/тај** (that, m)
та/та (that, f)
то/to (that, n)
- 4 Interrogative pronouns – **чији/čiji** (whose, m)
чија/čija (whose, f)
чије/čije (whose, n)
- 5 Indefinite pronouns – **икакав/ikakav** (any kind, m)
икаква/ikakva (any kind, f)
икакво/ikakvo (any kind, n)

- 6 Negative pronouns – **никакав/nikakav** (no kind, m)
никаква/nikakva (no kind, f)
никакво/nikakvo (no kind, n)

8.1 Personal pronouns

Personal pronouns refer to living and non-living things. They consist of the following:

1st person singular: The person speaking.	I	ја ја
2nd person singular: The person spoken to/listening.	you	ти ti
3rd person singular: The person listening but not participating in the conversation, or the person or thing being spoken about.	he/she/it	он/она/оно on/ona/ono
1st person plural: The person speaking and others.	we	ми mi
2nd person plural: The persons spoken to, or a person spoken to with respect or in formal address. When followed by a verb in the past tense, the past participle ending is in the 2nd p.pl. masculine, regardless of the gender of the subject (where ordinarily 2nd p.pl. feminine or neuter would be expected when addressing a female or a neuter gender body): ви сте читали/vi ste čitali and not ви сте читале/vi ste čitale .	you	ви/Ви vi/Vi (capitalised showing respect or in formal address in correspondence)
3rd person plural: The persons listening but not participating in the conversation, or the persons or things spoken about.	they	они (m/mixed gender) они оне (f) оне она (n) она

Since it is believed that only humans are able to speak, the 1st and 2nd persons generally refer to humans. The 3rd person, being a passive participant in the conversation, or the object of it, can be either a living or a non-living thing.

Personal pronouns do not indicate gender in the 1st and 2nd persons, but only in the 3rd person. In Serbian, the 3rd person singular and plural forms have different endings for the three genders.

The formation of tenses, along with the appropriate auxiliary verbs, indicating person, number and/or gender make it possible for personal pronouns to frequently be omitted as the subject of a sentence.

Смејале смо се. (ми) Smejale smo se. (mi) We (f) laughed.

Није га желео али га је ипак купио. (он) Nije ga želeo ali ga je ipak kupio. (on) (He) didn't want it but (he) nonetheless bought it.

The personal pronoun may also be omitted as the subject of a subordinate clause if it is the same as that in the main clause and whenever the subject has already been referred to and is clearly known:

Они ће доћи код Вас у посету ако се (они) врате до подне. Oni će doći kod Vas u posetu ako se (oni) vrate do podne. They will come to visit you if (they) return by noon.

– **Био сам код жене у болници јуче. Bio sam kod žene u bolnici juče.** – I visited (my) wife in the hospital yesterday.

– **Нисам знао да је у болници. (она). Nisam znao da je u bolnici. (ona)** – I didn't know (she) was in hospital.

Personal pronouns are divided into stressed and unstressed pronouns. Unstressed personal pronouns are enclitics and as such must follow a given word order (see Chapter 13 Enclitics).

8.1.1 Declension of personal pronouns

In addition to indicating gender and number, personal pronouns also decline. Pronouns for 1st person and 2nd person, both singular and plural, as well as the reflexive pronoun **се/se** (self), decline as feminine nouns ending in **-а (кућа/кућа)** in the genitive, dative, locative and instrumental cases. They do not have a form in the vocative case:

	Singular			Plural	
	1st p.	2nd p.	Reflexive	1st p.	2nd p.
Nom.	ја	ти	–	ми	ви
	ја	ти		ми	ви
Gen.	мене – ме	тебе – те	себе	нас	вас
	мене – ме	тебе – те	себе	нас	вас
Dat.	мени – ми	теби – ти	себи	нама – нам	вама – вам
	мени – ми	теби – ти	себи	нама – нам	вама – вам
Acc.	мене – ме	тебе – те	себе – се	нас	вас
	мене – ме	тебе – те	себе – се	нас	вас
Voc.	–				
Inst.	мноm, мноmе	тобом	собом	нама	вама
	мноm, мноmе	тобом	собом	нама	вама
Loc.	мени	теби	себи	нама	вама
	мени	теби	себи	нама	вама

Personal pronouns in the 3rd person belong to the pronominal declension:

	Singular			Plural		
	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
Nom.	он	оно	она	они	она	оне
	он	оно	она	они	она	оне
Gen.	њeга – га	њe – je			њих – их	
	њeга – га	њe – je			њих – их	
Dat.	њeмy – my	њoj – joj			њима – им	
	њeтu – ту	њoj – joj			њима – им	
Acc.	њeга – га – њ	њy, jy, je			њих – их	
	њeга – га – њ	њy, jy, je			њих – их	
Voc.	–	–			–	
Inst.	њимe – њим	њомe, њом			њима	
	њимe – њим	њомe – њом			њима	
Loc.	њeмy	њoj			њима	
	њeтu	њoj			њима	

The masculine and neuter forms in the singular are the same except in the nominative, while the plural forms for all three genders are the same in the genitive and accusative, and in the dative, instrumental and locative.

8.1.2 Stressed personal pronouns

Stressed personal pronouns are the long pronouns in the genitive, dative and accusative cases. The instrumental case also has a long form. They decline as follows:

	Singular				Plural			
	1st p.	2nd p.	3rd p.		1st p.	2nd p.	3rd p.	
	I	you	he	she	it	we	you	they
Gen.	мене	тебе	њeга	њe	њeга	нас	вас	њих
	mene	tebe	njega	nje	njega	nas	vas	njih
Dat.	мени	теби	њeмy	њoј	њeмy	нама	вама	њима
	meni	tebi	njemu	njoj	njemu	nama	vama	njima
Acc.	мене	тебе	њeга	њy	њeга	нас	вас	њих
	mene	tebe	njega	nju	njega	nas	vas	njih
Inst.	мноm(e)	тобом	њим(e)	њом(e)	њим(e)	нама	вама	њима
	mnom(e)	toбом	njim(e)	njom(e)	njim(e)	nama	vama	njima

They can take almost any position in the word order, and are used in the following instances:

- When a personal pronoun begins a sentence, it has to be stressed:
Тебе сy позвали. Tebe su pozvali. They invited you.
Њeга сви воле. Njega svi vole. Everybody likes him.
- Following conjunctions **a/a** (and, but), **и/i** (and) and **ни/ni** (neither):
Писали сy и вама и нама. Pisali su i vama i nama. They wrote to you and to us.
Њoј сy купили цвеће a њeмy флашу вина. Njoj su kupili цвеће a njemu flašu vina. They bought flowers for her and a bottle of wine for him.
- In the dative and genitive when used with a preposition:

Да ли је ово поклон од тебе?	Da li je ovo poklon od тебе?	Is this a present <i>from</i> <i>you?</i>
Дете је отишло ка њему.	Dete je otišlo ka њему.	The child went <i>towards</i> <i>him.</i>

4 When emphasis or contrast are required:

Не обраћа се теби!	Ne obraća se tebi!	He's not speaking <i>to</i> <i>you!</i>
Њега ми је доста!	Njega mi je dosta!	I've had enough <i>of him!</i>

In the instrumental singular, the 1st person and all three genders in the 3rd person have two forms: **мноm/мноm** and **мноме/мноме**, **њим/њим** and **њиме/њиме**, and **њом/њом** and **њоме/њоме**. Although the first form is short, it is not an enclitic and is usually used with a preposition, while the longer form is usually used without a preposition:

Хајде са мноm у биоскоп.	Haјde sa мноm u bioskop.	Come <i>with me</i> to the cinema.
Моји се родитељи поносе мноме.	Moји se roditelјi ponose мноме.	My parents are proud <i>of me.</i>
Били смо у биоскопу са њом.	Bili smo u bioskopu sa њом.	We were in the cinema <i>with her.</i>
Мој се брат оженио њоме.	Moj se brat oženio њоме.	My brother married <i>her.</i>

8.1.3 Unstressed personal pronouns

Unstressed personal pronouns are the short form of pronouns given in the genitive, dative and accusative cases. They are also called pronominal enclitics and are as follows:

	Singular					Plural		
	1st p.	2nd p.	3rd p.			1st p.	2nd p.	3rd p.
	I	you	he	she	it	we	you	they
Gen.	ме	те	га	је	га	нас	вас	их
	me	te	ga	je	ga	nas	vas	ih
Dat.	ми	ти	му	јој	му	нам	вам	им
	mi	ti	mu	joj	mu	nam	vam	im
Acc.	ме	те	га – њ	ју – је	га – њ	нас	вас	их
	me	te	ga – nj	ju – je	ga – nj	nas	vas	ih

Feminine pronouns in the accusative have two short forms: **ју/ју** and **је/је**. When the pronominal enclitic is followed by the verbal enclitic **је/је** ('is', auxiliary to past tense), or the word preceding the enclitic ends with **-је/је**, the short form **ју/ју** is used. Otherwise **је/је** is used:

Она је купила књигу.	Она је купила књигу.	She <i>bought</i> the book.
Она ју је купила.	Она ју је купила.	She <i>bought</i> it. (book – f.)

Masculine and neuter pronouns also have two short, enclitic forms in the accusative. The **га/га** form is generally used. **њ/њ** is used only with prepositions taking that case (with the stress being transferred from the pronoun onto the preposition), where ordinarily the long, stressed form would be used.

Хоћете ли га позвати?	Hoćete li га pozvati?	Will you call <i>him</i> ?
Овај позив је за њ (за њега).	Ovaj poziv je за њ (за njega).	This invitation is <i>for</i> <i>him</i> .

Unstressed personal pronouns cannot begin a sentence. They cannot ordinarily follow a preposition or the conjunctions **и/и** (and) and **а/а** (and, but). They are enclitics and must follow the enclitic word order. (See Chapter 13 Enclitics.)

8.1.4 Order of unstressed personal pronouns

The following order of the short form of personal pronouns, enclitics, must be followed when two or more pronominal enclitics appear together:

- 1 The dative case:

ми	ти	мү	јој	мү	нам	вам	им
mi	ti	mu	joj	mu	nam	vam	im

- 2 The genitive case:

ме	те	га – њ	је	га	нас	вас	их
me	te	ga – nj	je	ga	nas	vas	ih

- 3 The accusative case:

ме	те	га – њ	ју – је	га – њ	нас	вас	их
me	te	ga – nj	ju – je	ga – nj	nas	vas	ih

Ана је купила књигу брату.	Ana je kupila knjigu bratu.	Anna bought a book for her brother.
Купилу му ју је. (dat./acc.)	Kupila mu ju je. (dat./acc.)	She bought it for him.
Младен је дао новац сестри.	Mladen je dao novac sestri.	Mladen gave the money to his sister.
Дао јој га је. (dat./acc.)	Dao joj ga je. (dat./acc.)	He gave it to her.
Сећаш ли се куће?	Sećaš li se kuće?	Do you remember the house?
Сећаш ли је се! (gen.)	Sećaš li je se! (gen.)	Do you remember it?

Enclitics in the genitive are generally used with verbs that take that case.

8.2 Reflexive pronouns

Reflexive pronouns are intrinsically related to reflexive verbs. When the subject of an action is also the object of that action, it is said that the action is reflected back onto the subject, thus making the subject the bearer, i.e. the object, of its own action. This reflection is expressed through the use of the reflexive pronoun **себе/sebe** (oneself) or its short, enclitic form **се/se** (see Chapter 13 Enclitics). True reflexiveness is expressed with the use of the enclitic form **се/se** in the accusative case, while the long form **себе/sebe** is used as an emphatic.

Себе увек мораш да поштујеш.	Sebe uvek moraš da poštuješ.	You must always respect yourself.
Смири се.	Smiri se.	(You) calm (yourself) down.

Another reflexive pronoun with an emphatic function is the pronoun **сам/sam** (oneself) which is used with the long or the short form of **себе/sebe**:

Обећао је самом себи да неће пити.	Obećao je samom sebi da neće piti.	He promised to himself that he won't drink. (dat.)
---	---	--

The reflexive pronoun **себе/sebe** has no person, gender or number marker, while the reflexive pronoun **сам/sam** has gender and number.

Reflecting the traits of the subject, reflexive pronouns can be used in the following manner:

- As the direct object – in the accusative, both forms are used without a preposition. The reflexive pronoun has to be traced back to the subject, which in this instance is also the object, reflected by the pronoun:

Мајка се вратила. Majka se vratila. Mother has returned (*herself*).

Човек треба *самог себе* да воли. Čovek treba *samog sebe* da voli. One needs to love *oneself*.

- The reflexive pronoun **себе/sebe** can also be used in a context of reciprocity when the subject and object have a reciprocal relationship with each other, expressed through the verb (the English equivalent of ‘each other’ or ‘one another’). In this case the two can be expressed as the subject while the reflexive pronoun **се/se** denotes the relationship of reciprocity and reflexivity:

(Џон воли Анку.) (Džon voli Anku.) (John loves Anka.)

Џон и Анка се воле. Džon i Anka se vole. John and Anka love *each other*.

Они се воле. Oni se vole. They love *each other*.

- As the indirect object – excluding the accusative case, in the long form:

Човек треба да се *собом* поноси. Čovek treba da se *sobom* ponosi. One should be proud of *oneself*. (inst.)

- Following prepositions – all cases, in the long form:

Он даје све од себе. On daje sve od sebe. He is giving all of *himself*.

Изађи на крај са собом. Izađi na kraj sa sobom. Sort *yourself* out.

Ја имам довољно за себе. Ja imam dovoljno za sebe. I have enough *for myself*.

The reflexive pronouns **себе/sebe** and **сам/sam** decline as follows:

Reflexive pronouns								
себе/sebe		сам/sam						
	Long form	Enclitic	Singular			Plural		
			Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
Nom.	–		сам	само	сама	сами	сама	саме
			sam	samo	sama	sami	sama	same
Gen.	себе		самог	само	сама		самих	
	sebe		samog	samo	sama		samih	
Dat.	себи		самом	самој	самој		самима	
	sebi		samom	samoj	samoj		samima	
Acc.	себе	се	самог	само	саму	саме	сама	саме
	sebi	se	samog	samo	samu	same	sama	same
Voc.	–							
Instr.	собом		самим	самом	самом		самима	
	sobom		samim	samom	samom		samima	
Loc.	себи		самом	самој	самој		самима	
	sebi		samom	samoj	samoj		samima	

The reflexive pronoun **себе/sebe** has no nominative or vocative case and has the same form for both singular and plural. Its enclitic form exists only in the accusative case (and sometimes in the genitive case), taking on the role of the object through reflection.

8.3 Possessive pronouns

Possessive pronouns indicate to whom or to what something belongs:

Чија је ово оловка? Ћија је ово оловка? Whose pencil is this?

Моја је. Моја је. It is mine.

Моја/моја (mine) refers to the pencil as well as to the person to whom it belongs, while **оловка/olovka** (pencil) is a feminine noun in the nominative singular. The pronoun **моја/моја** is given a feminine ending to reflect this.

In Serbian, possessive pronouns behave and decline as adjectives, and are referred to as adjectives and pronouns (see Section 9.4 Possess-

ive adjectives). They have person and agree in case, number and gender with the noun that they qualify or to which they refer. The 3rd person singular and plural decline like indefinite adjectives (see Section 9.2 Indefinite adjectives), while the 1st and 2nd persons singular and plural decline as definite adjectives (see Section 9.3 Definite adjectives).

Possessive pronouns include the following in the nominative singular:

my	МОЈ, МОЈЕ, МОЈА moj, moje, moja
your	ТВОЈ, ТВОЈЕ, ТВОЈА tvoj, tvoje, tvoja
reflexive possessive pronoun:	СВОЈ, СВОЈЕ, СВОЈА
one's own	свој, своје, своја
our	НАШ, НАШЕ, НАША naš, naše, naša
your (pl.)	ВАШ, ВАШЕ, ВАША vaš, vaše, vaša
his	ЊЕГОВ, ЊЕГОВО, ЊЕГОВА njegov, njegovo, njegova
her	ЊЕН, ЊЕНО, ЊЕНА njen, njeno, njena ЊЕЗИН, ЊЕЗИНО, ЊЕЗИНА njezin, njezino, njezina
their	ЊИХОВ, ЊИХОВО, ЊИХОВА njihov, njihovo, njihova

Possessive pronouns: **твој/твој**, **наш/наш**, **ваш/ваш**, and the reflexive possessive pronoun **свој/свој**, decline like **мој/мој**. The pronouns **наш/наш** (ours) and **ваш/ваш** (yours) take the soft consonantal endings **-ег(а)/ег(а)** instead of **-ог(а)/ог(а)**, and **-ем(у)/ем(у)** instead of **-ом(е)/ом(е)**:

Possessive pronoun мој/мој (my)						
	Singular			Plural		
	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
Nom.	мој мој	моје моје	моја моја	моји моји	моја моја	моје моје
Gen.	мојег(а) – мог(а) мојег(а) – мог(а)	мојег(а) – мог(а) мојег(а) – мог(а)	моје моје		мојих мојих	
Dat.	мојем(у) – мом(е) мојем(у) мом(е)	мојем(у) – мом(е) мојем(у) мом(е)	мојој мојој		мојима – мојим мојима – мојим	
Acc.	Same as nom./gen.	моје моје	моја моја	моје моје	моја моја	моје моје
Voc.	мој мој	моје моје	моја моја	моји моји	моја моја	моје моје
Inst.	мојим мојим	мојим мојим	мојом мојом		мојима – мојим мојима – мојим	
Loc.	мојем(у) – мом(е) мојем(у) мом(е)	мојем(у) – мом(е) мојем(у) мом(е)	мојој мојој		мојима – мојим мојима – мојим	

The possessive pronoun **свој/svoj** means 'one's own', and has gender, number and case. It is used when the object it describes belongs to the subject of the sentence or clause:

Ја волим своју жену. **Ја volim svoju ženu.** I love *my (own)* wife.

Ти волиш своју жену. **Ti voliš svoju ženu.** He loves *his (own)* wife.

Он воли своју жену. **On voli svoju ženu.** He loves *his (own)* wife.

Он воли његову жену. **On voli njegovu ženu.** He loves *his* wife.

The last sentence may mean that he loves someone else's wife as his own is not stipulated. Equally, the possessive pronoun cannot stand on its own, without a subject to trace it back to:

Био је на вечери са својом женом. **Bio je na večeri sa svojom ženom.** He went to dinner with his wife.

But not

Он и своја жена су били на вечери. **On i svoja žena su bili na večeri.** He and his own wife went to dinner.

since the 'own' has no subject to belong to.

The possessive pronoun can also be omitted when it is clear from the context who the 'owner' is:

Он и жена су били на вечери. **On i žena su bili na večeri.** He and (his) wife went to dinner.

The possessive pronouns **његов/његов**, **њен/њен**, **њезин/њезин** decline as both indefinite and definite adjectives, with the latter being more frequently used:

Possessive pronoun његов/његов (his)						
	Singular			Plural		
	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
Nom.	његов	његово	његова	његови	његова	његове
	њен –	њено	њена –	њени –	њена –	њене –
	њезин	њезино	њезина	њезини	њезина	њезине
	његов	његово	његова	његови	његова	његове
	њен –	њено –	њена –	њени –	њена –	њене –
	њезин	њезино	њезина	њезини	њезина	њезине
Gen.	његовог	његовог	његове		његових	
	њеног –	њеног	њене –		њених –	
	њезиног	њезиног	њезине		њезиних	
	његовог	његовог	његове		његових	
	њеног –	њеног –	њене –		њених –	
	њезиног	њезиног	њезине		њезиних	
Dat.	његовом	његовом	његовој		његовим	
	њеном(е) –	њеном –	њеној –		њеним –	
	њезином(е)	њезином	њезиној		њезиним	
	његовом	његовом	његовој		његовим	
	њеном(е) –	њеном –	њеној –		њеним –	
	њезином(е)	њезином	њезиној		њезиним	

Possessive pronoun **ЊЕГОВ/његов** (his)

	Singular			Plural		
	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
Acc. Same as nom./gen.	ЊЕГОВО	ЊЕГОВУ	ЊЕГОВЕ	ЊЕГОВА	ЊЕГОВЕ	
	ЊЕНО –	ЊЕНУ –	ЊЕНЕ –	ЊЕНА –	ЊЕНЕ –	
	ЊЕЗИНО	ЊЕЗИНУ	ЊЕЗИНЕ	ЊЕЗИНА	ЊЕЗИНЕ	
	његово	његову	његове	његова	његове	
	њјено –	њјену –	њјене –	њјена –	њјене –	
	њјезино	њјезину	њјезине	њјезина	њјезине	
Voc.	ЊЕГОВ	ЊЕГОВО	ЊЕГОВА	ЊЕГОВИ	ЊЕГОВА	ЊЕГОВЕ
	ЊЕН –	ЊЕНО –	ЊЕНА –	ЊЕНИ –	ЊЕНА –	ЊЕНЕ –
	ЊЕЗИН	ЊЕЗИНО	ЊЕЗИНА	ЊЕЗИНИ	ЊЕЗИНА	ЊЕЗИНЕ
	њјегов	њјегово	њјегова	њјегови	њјегова	њјегове
	њјен –	њјено –	њјена –	њјени –	њјена –	њјене –
	њјезин	њјезино	њјезина	њјезини	њјезина	њјезине
Inst.	ЊЕГОВИМ	ЊЕГОВИМ	ЊЕГОВОМ		ЊЕГОВИМ	
	ЊЕНИМ –	ЊЕНИМ –	ЊЕНОМ –		ЊЕНИМ –	
	ЊЕЗИНИМ	ЊЕЗИНИМ	ЊЕЗИНОМ		ЊЕЗИНИМ	
	њјеговим	њјеговим	њјеговом		њјеговим	
	њјеним	њјеним	њјеном		њјеном	
	њјезиним	њјезиним	њјезиним		њјезиним	
Loc.	ЊЕГОВОМ	ЊЕГОВОМ	ЊЕГОВОЈ		ЊЕГОВИМ	
	ЊЕНОМ(е) –	ЊЕНОМ –	ЊЕНОЈ –		ЊЕНИМ –	
	ЊЕЗИНОМ(е)	ЊЕЗИНОМ	ЊЕЗИНОЈ		ЊЕЗИНИМ	
	њјеговом	њјеговом	њјеговој		њјеговим	
	њјеном(е)	њјеном –	њјеној –		њјеним –	
	њјезиним(е)	њјезиним	њјезиној		њјезиним	

8.4 Demonstrative pronouns

Demonstrative pronouns refer to the distance, size or type of thing or person that is being spoken about. The reference points are:

- The speakers themselves, whereby **овај/овaj** (this one) refers to the 1st person or speaker, **тај/таj** (this/that one) refers to the 2nd person, listener or participant, and **онај/онаj** (that one) refers to the 3rd person, or the person or thing spoken about:

Ова је моја соба, Ова је моја *This is my room, that*
та је твоја а она *soба, та је твоја* *one is yours and that*
је његова. *а она је његова.* *one (over there) is his.*

- Or the location of the speakers, whereby ‘this’ or ‘that one’, to whom reference has already been made, is demonstrated by **тај/тај**. ‘This one over here’, located close by, is demonstrated by **овај/овај** and ‘that one over there’, not so close by, is demonstrated by **онај/онај**. Other demonstrative pronouns formed from the stem of these, **толики/toliki** (one this or that big), **оволики/ovoliki** (one this big) and **онолики/onoliki** (one that big), have the same distinction.

The demonstrative pronoun **ово/ово**, when followed by a verb, equates to the English use of ‘this (is)’:

Ово је наша соба. Ово је наша соба. This is our room.

Demonstrative pronouns include the following:

this one, that one	тај, то, та тај, то, та
this one (over here)	овај, ово, ова овај, ово, ова
that one (over there)	онај, оно, она онај, оно, она
such, like that one (over here)	такав, такво, таква takav, takvo, takva
such, like this one	овакав, овакво, оваква ovakav, ovakvo, ovakva
such, like that one (over there)	онакав, онакво, онаква onakav, onakvo, onakva
(one) so big	толики, толико, толика toliki, toliko, tolika
(one) this big	оволики, оволико, оволика ovoliki, ovoliko, ovolika
(one) that big	онолики, онолико, онолика onoliki, onoliko, onolika
the same	исти, исто, иста isti, isto, ista

The demonstrative pronouns **овај/овај** and **онај/онај** decline like **тај/тај**:

Demonstrative pronoun тај/тај (this, that)						
	Singular			Plural		
	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
Nom.	тај	то	та	ти	та	те
	taj	to	ta	ti	ta	te
Gen.	тога – тог		те	тих		
	toga – tog		te	tih		
Dat.	том(е) – том		тој	тима – тим		
	tom(e) – tom		toj	tima – tim		
Acc.	Same as nom./gen.	то	ту	те	та	те
		to	tu	te	ta	te
Voc.	–					
Inst.	тим		том	тима – тим		
	tim		tom	tima – tim		
Loc.	том(е) – том		тој	тима – тим		
	tom(e) – tom		toj	tima – tim		

The demonstrative pronouns **такав/takav**, **овакав/ovakav** and **онакав/onakav** decline like demonstrative (indefinite) adjectives:

Demonstrative pronoun такав/takav (like this/that)						
	Singular			Plural		
	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
Nom.	такав	такво	таква	такви	таква	такве
	takav	takvo	takva	takvi	takva	takve
Gen.	таквог		такве	таквих		
	takvog		takve	takvih		
Dat.	таквом		таквој	таквим		
	takvom		takvoj	takvim		
Acc.	Same as nom./gen.	такво	такву	такве	таква	такве
		takvo	takvu	takve	takva	takve

Voc.	–		
Inst.	ТАКВИМ takvim	ТАКВОМ takvom	ТАКВИМ takvim
Loc.	ТАКВОМ takvom	ТАКВОЈ takvoj	ТАКВИМ takvim

8.5 Relative pronouns

Relative pronouns begin a subordinating clause and refer to the noun preceding the clause:

Ово је кућа, коју желимо да купимо. **Ovo je kuća, koju želimo da kupimo.** This is the house, *which* we wish to buy.

Ово је кућа, какву нисте још видели. **Ovo je kuća, kakvu niste još videli.** This is a house, *the kind of which* you have not seen before.

There are seven basic types of relative pronouns in Serbian. These are divided into two categories:

- 1 **ко/ко** (who), has case and is masculine singular, and **шта/шта** (what) and **(оно) што/(оно) што** (that which), have case and are neuter singular:

Свако ко дође код нас похвали нашу башту. **Svako ko dođe kod nas pohvali našu baštu.** Everyone *who* comes to our place praises our garden.

Џон је човек кога Ана воли. **Džon je čovek koga Ana voli.** John is the man *whom* Ana loves.

Оно чиме пишеш се зове оловка. **Ono čime pišeš se zove olovka.** That *what* (which) you are writing with is called a pencil.

- 2 **који/који** (which), **чији/чији** (whose), **какав/kakav** (the quality/kind/type of), **колики/koliki** (the amount/size/extent of) have number, gender and case:

Траже кафану у којој је дозвољено пушење. **Traže kafanu u kojoj je dozvoljeno pušenje.** They're looking for a pub *in which* smoking is allowed.

Назови жену чија је ово хаљина.	Nazovi ženu čija je ovo haljina.	Call the woman whose dress this is.
Ово је жена са чијом сестром смо били на мору.	Ovo je žena sa čijom sestrom smo bili na moru.	This is the woman with whose sister we were at the coast.

The relative pronouns **ко/ко** (who) and **шта/шта** (what) decline in the following manner:

Relative pronouns ко/ко (who) and шта/шта (what)		
	Masculine	Neuter
Nom.	ко – ко	шта – шта
Gen.	кога – кога	чега – чега
Dat.	ком(е) – ком(е)	чему – чему
Acc.	кога – кога	шта – шта
Voc.		-
Inst.	ким – ким	чим – чим
Loc.	ком(е) – ком(е)	чему – чему

The relative pronoun **што/што** does not decline.

The relative pronouns **који/који** (which) and **чији/чији** (whose) decline like definite adjectives:

Relative pronouns који/који (which) and чији/чији (whose)						
	Singular			Plural		
	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
Nom.	који	које	која	који	која	које
Gen.	којег(а) – којег(а)	које	која	који	која	које
Dat.	ком(е) – ком	којој	којој	којима – којим	којима – којим	
Acc.	Same as nom./gen.	које	коју	које	која	које

Voc.	–		
Inst.	којим	којом	којим(а)
	kojim	kojom	kojim(a)
Loc.	ком(е) – ком	којој	којима – којим
	kom(e) – kom	kojoj	kojima – kojim

The relative pronouns **какав/kakav** (the quality/kind/type of) and **колики/koliki** (the amount/size/extent of) decline like indefinite adjectives:

Relative pronoun какав/kakav (the quality/kind/type of)						
	Singular			Plural		
	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
Nom.	какав	какво	каква	какви	каква	какве
	kakav	kakvo	kakva	kakvi	kakva	kakve
Gen.	каквог	какве		каквих		
	kakvog	kakve		kakvih		
Dat.	каквом	каквој		каквим		
	kakvom	kakvoj		kakvim		
Acc.	Same as nom./gen.	какво	какву	какве	каква	какве
		kakvo	kakvu	kakve	kakva	kakve
Voc.	–	–	–	–	–	–
Inst.	каквим	каквом		каквим		
	kakvim	kakvom		kakvim		
Loc.	каквом	каквој		каквим		
	kakvom	kakvoj		kakvim		

8.6 Interrogative pronouns

Interrogative pronouns are used when asking questions and they generally begin a sentence. In form, they are closely related to relative

pronouns and, excluding the pronoun **што/što** which as an interrogative takes on the meaning of ‘Why?’ as a short form of the adverb **зашто/zašto**, the list of pronouns is the same:

ко ко	who?	Is masculine singular and declines. Applicable to humans. All verbs used with it are in the singular, except the verb бити/bititi (to be) which can be used in either the singular or the plural.
шта шта	what?	Is neuter singular and declines. Applicable to inanimate nouns. Verbs used with it are in the singular.
који који	which?	Has number, gender and case. Applicable to animate and inanimate nouns. Verbs used with it can be in either the singular or the plural.
чији чији	whose?	Same as који/koji .
какав какав	what kind/type?	Has number, gender and case. Applicable to animate and inanimate nouns. Refers to the quality of the noun.
колики koliki	what size/ extent?	Has number, gender and case. Applicable to animate and inanimate nouns. Refers to the quantity of the noun.

Ко су она деца!	Ko su ona deca?	Who are those children?
Кога сте позвали на вечеру?	Koga ste pozvali na večeru?	Whom have you invited for dinner?
Шта су вам купили за рођендан?	Šta su vam kupili za rođendan?	What have they bought you for your birthday?
Коју кошуљу да купим?	Koju kopolju da kupim?	Which shirt shall I buy?
Чија је ово кућа?	Čija je ovo kuća?	Whose house is this?
Какви су ови колачи?	Kakvi su ovi kolači?	What kind of cakes are these?
Колика вам је тераса?	Kolika vam je terasa?	How big is your terrace?

8.7 Universal pronouns

Used with animate and inanimate nouns, universal pronouns refer to a total sum or an individual part of a total sum.

Он се са сваким **On se sa svakim** He socialises with
дружи. **druži.** **everyone.**

The following are the most common universal pronouns used in Serbian:

свако svako	everybody/ everyone	Is masculine singular and declines. Applicable to animate nouns. All verbs used with it are in the singular.
свашта svašta	all kinds of things	Is neuter singular and declines. Applicable to inanimate nouns. When used as subject in the sentence, verbs used with it can only be in the singular. Also means 'Really! Nonsense!'
сваки svaki	every, everybody	Has gender and case and is normally singular. Neuter form also overlaps in meaning with above pronoun свако/svako . Applicable to animate and inanimate nouns. Verbs used with it are in the singular.
свачији svačiji	everybody's	Has number, gender and case. Applicable to animate and inanimate nouns. Refers to possession.
свакакав svakakav	all kinds, types	Has number, gender and case. Applicable to animate and inanimate nouns. Refers critically or dismissively to the quality of the noun.
сви svi	everybody, all	Has case and gender. Applicable to plural nouns. Verbs used with it are in the plural. Refers to the quantity of the noun.
све sve	all, everything	Has case. Refers to inanimate nouns. Verbs used with it are in the singular.

Свако се жали на њу.	Svako se žali na nju.	<i>Everyone complains about her.</i>
Свашта сте ми испричали.	Svašta ste mi ispričali.	<i>You've told me all kinds of things.</i>
Свако дете воли да се игра.	Svako dete voli da se igra.	<i>Every child loves to play.</i>
Он је свачији љубимац.	On je svačiji ljubimac.	<i>He is everyone's pet.</i>

Свакакви се људи овде скупљају.	Svakakvi se ljudi ovde skupljaју.	All kinds of people gather here.
Сви су дошли на њен рођендан.	Svi su došli na njen rođendan.	Everybody came to her birthday (party).
Са њеном мајком можеш слободно о свему да разговараш.	Sa njenom majkom možeš slobodno o svemu da razgovaraš.	You can talk freely with her mother about everything.

The universal pronouns **свако/svako** (everybody/everyone) and **сваки/сваки – сваки, свако, свака/svaki, svako, svaka** (every/everybody) decline like a definite adjective, while **свашта/svašta** (all kinds of things) declines like **шта/šta** (what).

The universal pronoun **свачији/svačiji** (everybody's) declines like the relative pronoun **чији/čiji** (whose) while **свакакав/svakakav** (all kinds/types) declines like the relative pronoun **какав/kakav** (the quality/kind/type of).

The pronouns **све/sve** (all) and **сви/svi** (everybody, all) decline in the following manner:

Universal pronouns све/sve (all) and сви/svi (everybody, all)						
	Singular			Plural		
	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
Nom.		све sve		сви svi	сва sva	све sve
Gen.		свега svega			свих svih	
Dat.		свему svemu			свим/свима svim/svima	
Acc.		Same as nom.			све sve	
Voc.		–			–	
Inst.		свим svim			свим/свима svim/svima	
Loc.		свему svemu			свим/свима svim/svima	

Adjectives

Unlike pronouns, which replace nouns, adjectives describe or modify nouns. They agree with the noun they describe in number, gender and case and every adjective has a form for all three genders, in the singular and in the plural.

Adjectives can describe a noun attributively – by either preceding or immediately following it:

**Нова хаљина
је била скупа.**

**Nova haljina je
bila skupa.**

The *new* dress was
expensive.

**Хаљина нова
је била скупа.**

**Haljina nova je
bila skupa.**

The *new* dress was
expensive.

or predicatively – by following the linking (copular) verb – ‘to be, to become, to feel, to remain, to seem’, etc.:

**Нова хаљина је
била скупа.**

**Nova haljina je
bila skupa.**

The *new* dress was
expensive.

**Предавање постаје
досадно.**

**Predavanje postaje
dosadno.**

The lecture is
becoming *boring*.

The following are the most common types of adjectives:

Type	Answers to the question	Adjective (given in m.sg.)	
Descriptive (indefinite)	какав/каков (what kind)?	плав/plav	blue
Descriptive (definite)	који/који (which)?	плави/plavi	blue
Possessive (definite)	чији/чији (whose)?	сестрин/sestrin српски/srpski	sister's Serbian

Type	Answers to the question	Adjective (given in m.sg.)	
Material (indefinite)	чега/čega (of what material is it made – constructed)?	гвозеден/gvozden стаклен/staklen мастан/mastan	(made of) iron (made of) glass greasy
Time related (definite)	када/kada (when)?	летњи/letnji прошли/prošli	summer past
Place related (definite)	где/gde (where)?	доњи/donji последњи/poslednji	lower last

Какав је он човек?	Kakav je on čovek?	What kind of man is he?
Поштен.	Pošten.	Honest.
Који ти се човек допада?	Koji ti se čovek dopada?	Which man do you like?
Онај црни с брковима.	Onaj crni s brkovima.	The dark-haired one with a moustache.
Где је ваш стан?	Gde je vaš stan?	Where is your flat?
На последњем спрату.	Na poslednjem spratu.	On the top floor.

Descriptive adjectives have two forms: a definite and an indefinite form. In their use, definite adjectives could be said to be similar to the English definite article ‘the’, while indefinite adjectives are similar to the English indefinite article ‘a/an’.

Стари шешир ме је добро служио.	Stari šešir me je dobro služio.	The old hat served me well. (def.)
--	--	------------------------------------

The remaining adjectives have either one or the other form.

Adjectives cannot stand on their own in a sentence unless they follow the verb, in which case the indefinite form is used:

Овај шешир је стар. **Ovaj šešir je star.** This hat is old. (indef.)

Descriptive adjectives, and adverbs formed from them, have a comparative and a superlative form. Both forms agree with the noun in gender, number and case. The comparative form is formed by the addition of a suffix to the main adjective.

The suffix will depend on the adjective and its ending:

**Овај шешир је
старији од тебе.**

**Ovaj šešir je
stariji od tebe.**

This hat is *older*
than you.

**Мој пешкир је
мекши од њеног.**

**Moј peškir je
mekši od njenog.**

My towel is *softer*
than hers.

The superlative form is formed by the addition of one particular prefix: **нај/нај**, to the comparative form:

**Ја сам овде
најстарији.**

**Ja sam ovde
najstariji.**

I'm the *oldest* here.

**Твој пешкир је
стварно најмекши.**

**Tvoj peškir je
stvarno najmekši.**

Your towel really is
the *softest*.

9.1 Classification of adjectives

Adjectives are classified into hard and soft, and definite and indefinite:

- 1 Adjectives are hard or soft depending on the last consonant of their base. The base of an adjective is the part without the feminine and neuter gender endings:

слободна/слободно **slobodna/slobodno** free, vacant

слободн- **slobodn-**

The following consonants are the base endings of soft adjectives:

Ј Ј

Љ Љј

Њ Њј

Ц С

Ћ Ћ́

Ч Ч́

Ш Ш́

Ђ Ђ

Ж Ж́

Hard adjectives are those that end in any of the remaining consonants.

2 Descriptive adjectives have two forms, the definite and the indefinite. Both forms have gender, number and case, although they belong to different declensions.

- (a) Definite adjectives carry a similar meaning to the English definite article ‘the’, and are used when describing a known, already mentioned thing or being:

Ово је млади човек о којем сам ти причала.	Ovo je mladi čovek o kojem sam ti pričala.	This is <i>the young</i> man about whom I spoke to you.
---	---	---

- (b) Indefinite adjectives, similar in meaning to the English indefinite articles ‘a’ and ‘an’, are used when describing an unknown, until that particular point in time, unmentioned thing or being:

Паметан човек размишља о свему.	Pametan čovek razmišlja o svemu.	An <i>intelligent</i> person thinks about everything.
--	---	---

The following differences occur between the two forms:

- (i) The main difference is in the masculine singular in the nominative case, where indefinite adjectives end in a consonant:

стар камион star kamion (an) old truck

while definite adjectives end in **-и/i**:

стари камион stari kamion (the) old truck

- (ii) Adjectives describing nouns in the feminine gender differ only in accent, with the definite form having a longer unaccented final vowel than the indefinite form: **леп̄а/лепа̄**, and the indefinite form having a shorter accent: **лепа/лепа**;
- (iii) Indefinite adjectives in the masculine and neuter gender decline as masculine nouns in the first declension (see Section 7.4.1 Masculine and neuter nouns), except in the instrumental case where indefinite adjectives have an **-им/im** rather than **-ом/om** ending. Indefinite adjectives in the feminine singular decline in the same way as definite adjectives, as do all three genders in the plural.
- (iv) Definite adjectives follow an adjectival declension, which distinguishes between adjectives in the masculine and neuter singular base ending in hard and soft consonants. Where there is a hard adjectival ending, **-о/o** is included in the endings through the cases, and where the adjectival ending is soft, **-е/e** is included. This distinction is relevant only in the genitive, dative and locative cases for both genders, and

the nominative case for the neuter gender. The definite form is becoming predominant in use in the modern language.

старог камиона **starog kamiona** (of the) old truck (gen.)

млађег камиона **mlađeg kamiona** (of the) younger truck (gen.)

чисто стакло **čisto staklo** clean glass (nom.)

веће стакло **veće staklo** larger glass (nom.)

- (v) Feminine adjectives end in -a in both the definite and the indefinite form in the nominative singular, although the final vowel can be longer in the definite form:

стара кућа **stara kuća** (an) old house (indefinite)

старā кућа **starā kuća** (the) old house (definite)

- (vi) Hard neuter adjectives end in -o, both in the definite and the indefinite form in the nominative singular, while soft neuter adjectives end in -e:

старо дрво **staro drvo** (an/the) old tree – (indefinite/definite)

млађе дрво **mlađe drvo** (a/the) younger tree – (indefinite/definite)

9.2 Indefinite adjectives

Indefinite adjectives are used when describing someone or something unknown, being mentioned for the first time. They are given in response to the question **какав/какав?** (what kind/type?). Indefinite adjectives often carry the same reference as the English indefinite articles ‘a’ and ‘an’.

Although the indefinite form is older than the definite form, in the spoken language today the definite form is more commonly used.

The indefinite form is mostly used when following a verb, and in those instances the adjective often stands alone:

Имате ли **Imate li slobodan** Do you have a *free* table?
слободан сто? **sto?**

Да, овај сто је **Da, ovaj sto je** Yes, this table is *free*.
слободан. **slobodan.**

The form following the numbers **два/dva** (two), **три/tri** (three), **четири/četiri** (four) for masculine and neuter nouns always has the ending **-a**:

Два лепа вука су легла да спавају.	Dva lepa vuka su legla da spavaju.	<i>Two beautiful wolves lay down to sleep.</i>
Три вештачка језера су изграђена.	Tri veštačka jezera su izgrađena.	<i>Three artificial lakes have been built.</i>

The following have only the indefinite form:

1 Adjectives created from nouns to indicate possession by the addition of the following suffixes:

- (a) **-ов/ov**, if the noun ends in a hard consonant for nouns of masculine and neuter gender;
- (b) **-ев/ev**, if the noun ends in a soft consonant for nouns of masculine and neuter gender;
- (c) **љев/ljev**, added to the base of masculine nouns ending in **-в/v**
- (d) **-ин/in** for feminine and masculine nouns endings in **-a**:

братов (брат)	bratov (brat)	brother's
шешир	šešir	(brother) hat
младићев	mladićev	young man's
(младић) ауто	(mladić) auto	(young man) car
Бранков (Бранко)	Brankov	Branko's (Branko)
сат	(Branko) sat	watch
сестрин (сестра)	sestrin (sestra)	sister's (sister)
мобител	mobitel	mobile phone
Лукина (Лука)	Lukina (Luka)	Luka's (Luka
тетка	tetka	(man's name)) aunt

Created from nouns and proper names, these adjectives take the indefinite form in the nominative and accusative (masculine inanimate) cases. In the remaining cases, including the accusative masculine animate, the definite form endings can also be used.

2 The number **један/jedan** (one) – often used to mean the equivalent of the English indefinite articles 'a' or 'an':

Успут смо срели једног слепог човека.	Usput smo sreli jednog slepog čoveka.	<i>We met a blind man on the way.</i>
--	--	---

3 When the adjective ends in two consonants, other than **-ст/st**, **-зд/zd**, **-шт/št**, **-жд/žd**, which can stand together, a fleeting **a** is inserted before the final consonant in the masculine singular:

ведр-а vedr-a clear feminine

ведар vedar m indefinite

Declension of indefinite adjectives

	Singular			Plural		
	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
Nom.	добар dobar	добро dobro	Same declension as for definite adjectives			
Gen.	добра dobra					
Dat.	добру dobru					
Acc.	inanimate (as nom.)	добро				
	animate (as gen.)	добро				
Voc.	добри dobri	добро dobro				
Inst.	добрим dobrim					
Loc.	добру dobru					

9.3 Definite adjectives

Definite adjectives are used when describing something or someone already known to us, or possessing a particular or permanent quality. They are given in response to the question **који/koji?** (which?). The definite adjective is comparable in usage to the English definite article 'the', and is generally becoming the preferred form of adjective in use today.

The definite adjective differs from indefinite adjectives most apparently in the nominative masculine singular, where it ends in **-и/и:**

Уморни путник се синоћ вратио кући.	Umorni putnik se sinoć vratio kući.	<i>The tired traveller returned home last night.</i>
--	--	--

as compared to:

Уморан, путник се синоћ вратио кући.	Umoran, putnik se sinoć vratio kući.	<i>Tired, the traveller returned home last night.</i>
---	---	---

It does not differ from the indefinite adjective in the other genders in the nominative case.

The definite adjective is used attributively and stands next to the noun it describes:

Врућа супа нас чека.	Vruća supa nas čeka.	<i>Hot soup awaits us.</i>
-----------------------------	-----------------------------	----------------------------

In the genitive, dative, accusative and locative cases, masculine and neuter definite adjectives ending in a hard consonant will include an **-o** in the case ending, and those ending in a soft consonant will include an **-e**:

Младог лава су видели у Африци.	Mladog lava su videli u Africi.	<i>They saw the young lion in Africa.</i>
Носила је прстен на средњем прсту.	Nosila je prsten na srednjem prstu.	<i>She wore a ring on her middle finger.</i>

Masculine and neuter definite adjectives have a short and a long form in the genitive, dative and locative cases. Although the short form is in general use today, the long form is used when the noun described by the adjective is omitted:

Којем шефу сте се јавили?	Kojem šefu ste se javili?	<i>Which boss did you report to?</i>
Староме.	Starome.	<i>The old one.</i>

It is also used when the noun precedes the adjective or for stylistic reasons.

While descriptive adjectives have both the definite and the indefinite form, the following adjectives have only the definite form, apparent when describing masculine singular nouns:

- 1 Possessive adjectives ending in **-ји/ји, -ски/ski, -шки/ški, -чки/čki**, many of them created from names of countries and cities: **српски/srpski** (Serbian), **лондонски/londonski** (London's), **мађарски/mađarski** (Hungarian), **трговачки/trgovački** (merchant), etc.

- 2 Adjectives of time and place ending in **-ни/ni**, **-њи/nji**, **-шњи/šnji**: **десни/desni** (right), **летњи/letnji** (summer), **данашњи/današnji** (today's), **овдашњи/ovdašnji** (of this place).
- 3 Adjectives used as part of a name: **Нови Београд/Novi Beograd** (New Belgrade), **Нова година/Nova godina** (New Year), **црни лук/crni luk** (onions).
- 4 Ordinal numbers: **први/prvi** (first), **други/drugi** (second), etc.
- 5 Comparatives and superlatives: **лепши/lepši** (prettier), **спорији/sporiji** (slower), **бољи/bolji** (better), **најбољи/najbolji** (best), **дужи/duži** (longer), **најдужи/njaduži** (longest), **тежи/teži** (heavier), **најтежи/najteži** (heaviest), etc.
- 6 Adjectives: **мали/mali** (small, little), **исти/isti** (the same), **јарки/jarki** (bright, scorching), **неки/neki** (some), **бојни/bojni** (battle, combat), **велики/veliki** (big), etc.

Declension of definite adjectives

	Singular			Plural		
	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
Nom.	лаки laki	лако lako	лака laka	лаки laki	лака laka	лаке lake
Gen.		лаког(а) lakog(a)	лаке lake		лаких lakah	
Dat.		лаком(е/у) lakom(e/u)	лакој lakoј		лаким lakim	
Acc.	inanimate (as nom.)	лако	лаку	лаке	лака	лаке
	animate (as gen.)	лако	лаку	лаке	лака	лаке
Voc.	лаки laki	лако lako	лака laka	лаки laki	лака laka	лаке lake
Inst.		лаким lakim	лаком lakom		лаким lakim	
Loc.		лаком(е/у) lakom(e/u)	лакој lakoј		лаким lakim	

9.4 Possessive adjectives

Possessive adjectives are given in response to the interrogative **чији/чија?** (whose?). These adjectives correspond to the English possessive ending in 's'. They can be formed from singular nouns denoting persons, from proper names, names of animals, deities, countries, cities, etc.:

очев капут **očev kaput** father's coat

братова кола **bratova kola** brother's car

мамина маза **matina maza** mother's pet

Possessive adjectives are created by the addition of the following suffixes:

-ов/ov added to the base of masculine nouns ending in a hard consonant

-ев/ev added to the base of masculine nouns ending in a soft consonant

-љев/ljev added to the base of masculine nouns ending in **-в/v** (**Јаковљев/Jakovljev** but also **синовљев/sinovljev**)

-ин/in added to the base of nouns ending in **-а** which is dropped prior to the suffix ending

-ски/ski added to the base of names of countries, cities or areas

-чки/čki

-шки/ški

Adjectives ending in **-ов/ov**, **-ев/ev** and **-ин/in**, when formed from nouns denoting nationality, proper names, surnames, names of deities and nicknames, are capitalised:

Енглескињин **Engleskinjin** the English woman's

Србинов **Srbinov** the Serbian man's

Марков новчаник **Markov novčanik** Marko's wallet

Мађарев колач **Mađarev kolač** the Hungarian man's cake

Анина лутка **Anina lutka** Anna's doll

Adjectives with the following endings are formed from names of countries or cities and are not capitalised. These adjectives decline as definite adjectives:

-ски/ski	енглески – Енглеска	engleski – Engleska	England's – England
	српски – Србија	srpski – Srbija	Serbia's – Serbia
	европски – Европа	evropski – Evropa	Europe's – Europe
-чки/čki	словеначки – Словенија	slovenački – Slovenija	Slovenia's – Slovenia
-шки/ški	хашки – Хаг	haški – Hag	the Hague's – the Hague

However, the first word in a title or name of a region or administrative unit is capitalised.

Прва армијска област	Prva armijska oblast	the First Military District
Северноатлантска алијанса	Severnoatlantska alijansa	the North Atlantic Alliance

Possessive adjectives agree with the noun they qualify in gender, number and case:

Где је братов штап?	Gde je bratov štap?	Where is my brother's walking stick?
брат-ов	brat-ov	
Маринина пријатељица стиже данас.	Marinina prijateljica stiže danas.	Marina's friend is arriving today.
Марин(а)-ина	Marin(a)-ina	
Нисам био ни на једном европском првенству.	Nisam bio ni na jednom evropskom prvenstvu.	I haven't been to any European championships.
Да ли идете на Европско првенство у фудбалу 2004?	Da li idete na Evropsko prvenstvo u fudbalu 2004?	Are you going to the 2004 European Football Championship?

The very nouns from which possessive adjectives were formed can replace these adjectives:

**Где је штап моје
sestre? (сестрин
штап)**

**Gde је štap моје
sestre? (sestrin
štap)**

Where is the walking stick of my sister? (sister's)

**Деџак је купио нове
патице за спорт.
(спортске патице)**

**Dečak је kupio nove
patike за sport.
(sportske patike)**

The boy bought a new pair of trainers for sports. (sports trainers)

9.5 Adjectival declension

Adjectival declension (definite)

	Singular			Plural		
	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
Nom.	-и/i	-о/o	-а/a	-и/i	-а/a	-е/e
Gen.	-ог(a)/og(a)		-е/e	-их/ih		
Dat.	-ом(e/γ)/om(e/u)		-оj/oj	-им/im		
Acc.	inanimate (same as nom.) animate (same as gen.)	-о/o	-γ/u	-е/e	-а/a	-е/e
Voc.	-и/i	-о/o	-а/a	-и/i	-а/a	-е/e
Inst.	-им/im		-ом/om	-им/im		
Loc.	-ом(e/γ)/om(e/u)		-оj/oj	-им/im		

Comparison of definite and indefinite adjectival declensions for
masculine and neuter singular

Singular		
	Masculine	Neuter
Nom.	млад/млaд млад-и/млaд-и	млад-о/млaд-о млад-о/млaд-о
Gen.	млад-а/млaд-а млад-ог/млaд-ог	
Dat.	млад-у/млaд-у млад-ом(е)/млaд-ом(е)	
Acc.	млад/млaд and млад-а/млaд-а* млад-и/млaд-и and млад-ог/млaд-ог*	млад-о млaд-о
Voc.	млад-и млaд-и	
Inst.	млад-им млaд-им	
Loc.	млад-у/млaд-у млад-ом(е)/млaд-ом(е)	

* used with animate nouns

9.6 Comparative adjectives

Only descriptive adjectives have comparison. The three stages of comparison are the positive, the comparative and the superlative.

The basic form of the adjective is referred to as the positive adjective. Comparative adjectives are formed by the addition of suffixes to the positive masculine indefinite form:

- 1 **-ији/iji** masculine Some monosyllabic and most polysyllabic
-ије/ije neuter adjectives take this ending.
-ија/ija feminine

Positive	Comparative	
стар – star	старији – stariji	old/older
смрдљив – smrdljiv	смрдљивији – smrdljiviji	smelly/smellier
хладан* – hladan*	хладнији – hladniji	cold/colder

* The fleeting a is removed before the addition of the comparative suffix.

- 2 **-ји/ji** masculine Most monosyllabic adjectives take this ending.
-је/je neuter The **-j** merges with the preceding consonant and
-ја/ja feminine softens it (see Section 4.1.7 J changes).

Positive	Comparative	
млад – mlad	мла-ђи – mla-đi	young/younger
брз – brz	бр-жи – br-ži	fast/faster

- 3 **-ји/ji** masculine The endings **-ак, -ок, -ек** in the masculine, **-тко,**
-је/je neuter **-око, -еко** in the neuter and **-тка, -ока, -ека**
-ја/ja feminine in the feminine are replaced by these endings.
 The **-j** merges with the preceding consonant and softens it (see Section 4.1.7 J changes).

Positive	Comparative	
кратак – kratak	кра-ћи – kra-ći	short/shorter
близак – blizak	бли-жи – bli-ži	close/closer
дубок – dubok	дуб-љи – dub-lji	deep/deeper
далек – dalek	да-љи – da-lji	far/further

- 4 **-ши/ši** masculine Only three adjectives have this ending:
-ше/še neuter
-ша/ša feminine

Positive	Comparative	
лак – lak	лак-ши – lak-ši	easy, light/easier, lighter
леп – lep	леп-ши – lep-ši	beautiful, pretty/more beautiful, prettier
мек – mek	мек-ши – mek-ši	soft/softer

5 Adjectives with irregular comparatives:

Positive	Comparative	
добар – dobar	бољи – bolji	good/better
лош/зао – loš/zao	гори – gori	bad/worse
велик(и) – velik(i)	већи – veći	big/bigger
мали (мален) – mali (malen)	мањи – manji	small/smaller, at least
дебео – debeo	дебљи – deblji	fat/fatter

6 The comparative of adjectives ending in **-ски/ski**, and adjectives with three or more syllables, is sometimes formed with the adverbs **више/više** (more) or **мање/manje** (less) preceding the positive adjective:

Positive	Comparative	
родитељски – roditeljski	више родитељски – više roditeljski	parent-like/more parent-like
академски – akademski	мање академски – manje akademski	academic/less academic

Note: **мање/manje** can be put before any adjective.

Comparison can be expressed with the use of the conjunctions **него/ nego** or **но/но**, where the beings or objects compared remain in the same case, or with the conjunction **од/od**, in which case the second being or object compared is in the genitive case:

Њихова кућа је старија него наша.	Njihova kuća је starija nego naša.	Their house is <i>older</i> than ours.
Њихова кућа је старија од наше.	Njihova kuća је starija od naše.	Their house is <i>older</i> than ours.

Comparative adjectives may also be formed with the addition of the prefix **пре/pre-** with the meaning of ‘too’, added to the positive adjective:

Positive Comparative

добар предобар good/too good

dobar predobar

The adverb **сувише/suviše** (too much) can precede an adjective to give the same meaning:

Positive Comparative

добар сувише добар good/too good

dobar suviše dobar

This form of comparative adjective does not have a superlative form.

9.7 Superlative adjectives

Only descriptive adjectives have a comparative and a superlative form. The superlative adjective is formed by the addition of the prefix **нај/ naj-** to the comparative adjective:

Positive	Comparative	Superlative	
груб – grub	грубљи – grublji	најгрубљи – najgrublji	rough/rougher/ roughest
здрав – zdrav	здравији – zdraviji	најздравији – najzdraviji	healthy/healthier/ healthiest
бистар* – bistar*	бистрији – bistriji	најбистрији – najbistriji	transparent/more transparent/most transparent

* The fleeting a is removed before the addition of the comparative suffix.

The superlative prefix **нај/naj-** is added to the comparative form of adjectives with an irregular comparative:

Positive	Comparative	Superlative	
добар – dobar	бољи – bolji	најбољи – najbolji	good/better
лош/зao – loš/zao	гори – gori	најгори – najgori	bad/worse
велик(и) – velik(i)	већи – veći	највећи – najveći	big/bigger

Where the comparative form is formed by the addition of the adverb **више/više** (more) (or **мање/manje** (less)) to the positive adjective, the

superlative is formed by the addition of the superlative prefix **нај/нај-** to **више/više** (or **мање/manje**):

Positive	Comparative	Superlative	
родитељски – roditeljski	више родитељски – више roditeljski	највише родитељски – највише roditeljski	parent-like/most parent-like
академски – akademski	мање академски – мање akademski	најмање академски – најмање akademski	academic/least academic

As the superlative form involves more than two elements in comparison, it is followed by the preposition **од/od** which takes the genitive:

Њихова кућа је најстарија од свих кућа у селу.	Njihova kuća je najstarija od svih kuća u selu.	Their house is the <i>oldest</i> of all the houses in the village.
---	--	--

9.8 Verbal adjectives

There are four types of participles in the Serbian language, all of which are derived from verbs. Two of these are adjectival forms and are described as adjectival and referred to as verbal adjectives. The other two are adverbial forms, and are described as adverbial and referred to as verbal adverbs (see Section 10.4 Verbal adverbs).

The two verbal adjectives have gender and number. The first of these is indeclinable, while the other is declinable.

9.8.1 The active past participle

This verbal adjective is also referred to as the indeclinable active past participle. It denotes an action which had been carried out or was being carried out some time, often in the past, by the subject, who or which may or may not be known. This participle is often referred to as the **-л/-l** participle as its endings mostly include this letter:

Седео је Иван на клупи.	Sedeo je Ivan na klupi.	Ivan was sitting on the bench.
Мира га је видела и дозвала.	Mira ga je videla i dozvala.	Mira saw him and called out to him.

На мом рођендану гости су јели и пили.	Na mom rođendanu gosti su jeli i pili.	The guests <i>ate and drank</i> on my birthday.
Како сте путовали?*	Kako ste putovali?*	How was your journey (how did you travel)?*

* When using the 2nd person plural as an expression of politeness, the masculine plural of this participle is used regardless of the person's gender.

This is the most frequently used of all the participles due to its role in the formation of the past tense and most compound tenses, excluding the future tense:

Марија је волела свог пса.	Marija je volela svog psa.	Maria <i>loved</i> her dog.
Ако би дошао, отишли бисмо у град.	Ako bi došao, otišli bismo u grad.	If you <i>were to come</i> , we <i>would go</i> to town.

This participle can also take a purely adjectival role to describe a particular quality of the noun:

поседела коса/posedela kosa	hair that has turned grey
изгладнело дете/izgladnelo dete	a child that is worn out by hunger
преплануло лице/preplanulo lice	a suntanned face
оболели људи/oboleli ljudi	sick/ailing people

When used in this way, it will decline as an adjective. Many such participles have become proper adjectives:

зрела жена/zrela žena	a mature woman
зрео човек/zreo човек	a mature man
зрело воће/zrelo voće	ripe fruit

The active past participle is also used as an expression of good wishes, salutations and curses:

Живели!/Živeli!	Cheers!
Живео краљ!/Živeo kralj!	Long live the King!

9.8.2 Formation of the active past participle

This participle may be formed from all verbs types, imperfective, perfective, transitive and intransitive. It is formed from the infinitive base with the following endings:

Singular			Plural		
Masculine	Feminine	Neuter	Masculine	Feminine	Neuter
-о/о	-ла/ла	-ло/ло	-ли/ли	-ле/ле	-ла/ла

- With infinitives ending in **-ти/ti**:

To be	He was	She was	It was	They were	They were	They were
бити	био	била	било	били	биле	била
biti	bio	bila	bilо	bili	bile	bila
To want	He wanted	She wanted	It wanted	They wanted	They wanted	They wanted
хтети	хтео	хтела	хтело	хтели	хтеле	хтела
hteti	hteo	htela	htelo	hteli	htele	htela
To give	He gave	She gave	It gave	They gave	They gave	They gave
дати	дао	дала	дало	дали	дале	дала
dati	dao	dala	dalo	dali	dale	dala

- With infinitives ending in **-сти/sti**, the form of the participle depends on that of the present tense. When the last consonant of the present tense is dental, **д/d**, **т/t**, **дн/dn** or **тн/tn**, the participle is formed from the infinitive base as in the **-ти/ti** ending.

Infinitive	Present	Past participle						
		Masculine	Feminine	Neuter	Masculine	Feminine	Neuter	
јести	to eat	једем	јео	јела	јело	јели	јеле	јела
jesti		jedem	jeo	jela	jelo	jeli	jele	jela
провести	to spend	проведем	провео	провела	провело	провели	провеле	провела
provesti		provedem	proveo	provela	provelo	proveli	provele	provela

When the last consonant of the present tense base is not dental, the ending for masculine singular has a fleeting **a** inserted before the final **-o**.

- With infinitives ending in **-ћи/ći**, the participle endings above apply, in addition to the reappearance of the original **г/g** or **к/k** from which the **-ћи/ći** developed. A fleeting **a** is inserted before the final **-o** in the masculine singular. The present tense will often contain the original consonant.

Infinitive	Present	Participle					
		Masculine	Feminine	Neuter	Masculine	Feminine	Neuter
вүћи to pull	вүчем	вүкао	вүкла	вүкло	вүкли	вүкле	вүкла
вући	вучем	vukao	vukla	vuklo	vukli	vukle	vukla
моћи to be	могу	могао	могла	могло	могли	могле	могла
моћи able to	могу	mogao	mogla	moglo	mogli	mogle	mogla

Exceptions to this are **-ићи/ићи** and its derivatives (see Section 6.17 **Ићи/ићи** and its derivatives).

9.8.3 The passive participle

Also referred to as the past passive participle and the declinable passive past participle, this verbal adjective is used to form the passive, signifying that an action has been carried out on or to something or someone. It functions as a regular adjective, having gender and number as well as declension. In English it is usually translated by the ‘ed’ ending to a word.

It is often used when the subject carrying out the action is unknown or of no relevance. In addition to its purely adjectival function, it is also expressed as the second half of a ‘to be . . .’ sentence:

This participle is often referred to as the **-н-т/н-т** participle as its endings always include either one of these letters:

Фарбана коса понекад лепо изгледа.	Farbana kosa ponekad lepo izgleda.	Dyed (painted) hair sometimes looks good.
Зидови наше собе су офарбани.	Zidovi naše sobe su ofarbani.	The walls of our room are painted.
Волим да видим опране чаше.	Volim da vidim oprane čaše.	I like to see washed glasses.
Кажу да је та кућа проклета.	Kažu da je ta kuća prokleta.	The say that house is cursed.

9.8.4 Formation of the passive past participle

The passive past participle has both gender and declension and is formed from the infinitive base of transitive verbs only by the addition of the following endings:

Singular			Plural		
Masculine	Feminine	Neuter	Masculine	Feminine	Neuter
-ен/en	-ена/ena	-ено/eno	-ени/eni	-ене/ene	-ена/ena
-н/n	-на/na	-но/no	-ни/ni	-не/ne	-на/na
-т/t	-та/ta	-то/to	-ти/ti	-те/te	-та/ta

- Before the *-e/e* of the *-ен/en* endings, velars change into palatals, so the *к/k* of *рек-/rek-* changes to *ч/č*. Dentals (only in the *и-ти/i-ti* type of verb) change into palatals, so the *т/t* of *платити/platiti* and the *ц/c* of *бацити/baciti* change into *ћ/ć* and *ч/č* respectively. *Н/n* also changes to *њ/nj* and *л/l* to *љ/lj*; labials add *љ/lj*; only *р/r* and consonants that are already palatal fail to undergo further changes.

Infinitive		Participle		
		Masculine	Feminine	Neuter
рећи	to say – said	речен	речена	речено
рећи		рећен	рећена	рећено
платити	to pay – paid	плаћен	плаћена	плаћено
platiti		плаћен	плаћена	плаћено
бацити	to throw – thrown	бачен	бачена	бачено
baciti		баћен	баћена	баћено
запленити	to confiscate – confiscated	заплењен	заплењена	заплењено
zapleniti		zaplenjen	zaplenjena	zaplenjeno
хвалити	to praise – praised	хваљен	хваљена	хваљено
hvaliti		hvaljen	hvaljena	hvaljeno

- Infinitives in **-ати/ati** take **-н/n**, **-на/na**, **-но/no**:

Infinitive		Participle		
		Masculine	Feminine	Neuter
писати	to write – written	писан	писана	писано
pisati		pisan	pisana	pisano
читати	to read – read	читан	читана	читано
čitati		čitан	čitана	čitано

- Infinitives whose root ends in **-р/r** or whose linking vowel is **-у/u** or **-е/e** usually take the **-т/t**, **-та/ta**, **-то/to** endings:

Infinitive		Participle		
		Masculine	Feminine	Neuter
прострти	to spread out – spread out	прострт	прострта	прострто
prostrti		prostrt	prostrta	prostrto
напети	to tighten – tight	напет	напета	напето
napeti		napet	napeta	napeto

This participle has given rise to a whole category of nouns created in a similar way to English nouns formed from a verb and the suffix ‘-ing’ or ‘-ion’.

Infinitive		Participle		Noun
		Masculine	Neuter	
решити	to resolve, decide	решен	решење	resolution
rešiti		rešen	rešenje	
ослободити	to liberate	ослобођен	ослобођење	liberation
osloboditi		oslobođen	oslobođenje	

Adverbs

Adverbs are words used to modify or describe a verb or another adverb. Adverbs do not decline, nor do they mark person or number. They provide the following information about the action described by the verb:

- 1 Manner – how? When modifying verbs:

Брзо отвори прозор!	Brzo otvori prozor!	Open the window quickly!
----------------------------	----------------------------	--------------------------

- 2 Time – when? When modifying verbs:

Сада сам стигао кући.	Sada sam stigao kući.	I have arrived home now.
------------------------------	------------------------------	--------------------------

- 3 Place – where? When modifying verbs:

Можете да видите море одавде.	Možete da vidite more odavde.	You can see the sea from here.
--------------------------------------	--------------------------------------	--------------------------------

- 4 Quantity – how much? When modifying verbs (and nouns as a quantifier):

Она много једе.	Ona mnogo jede.	She eats a lot.
------------------------	------------------------	-----------------

Имамо много хлеба.	Imamo mnogo hleba.	We have a lot of bread.
---------------------------	---------------------------	-------------------------

- 5 Frequency – how often? When modifying verbs:

Никад не говоримо за време ручка.	Nikad ne govorimo za vreme ručka.	We never talk during lunch.
--	--	-----------------------------

- 6 Cause – why? When modifying verbs:

Био је гладан и зато је појео твоје парче.	Bio je gladan i zato je pojeo tvoje parče.	He was hungry and <i>that is why</i> he ate your piece.
---	---	---

7 Degree – intensifying or toning down. When modifying verbs:

Стварно мрзим зиму.	Stvarno mrzim zimu.	I <i>really</i> hate winter.
----------------------------	----------------------------	------------------------------

Сваког дана деца радо иду у школу аутобусом.	Svakog dana deca rado idu u školu autobusom.	Every day the children <i>gladly</i> go to school by bus.
---	---	---

The following adverb and adverbial expressions are used in the above sentence:

the time that the children go to school:	сваког дана/svakog dana	every day
the manner in which they go:	радо/rado	gladly
	and	аутобусом/autobusom
		by bus

The latter is a noun to which an adverbial function has been given by its use in the instrumental case.

Most adverbs in Serbian have developed from nouns, adjectives, pronouns or verbs. As such, they can be divided into four groups:

- (a) Substantival (nominal) adverbs – adverbs formed from nouns;
- (b) Adjectival adverbs – adverbs formed from adjectives;
- (c) Pronominal adverbs – adverbs formed from pronouns;
- (d) Verbal adverbs – adverbs formed from verbs.

10.1 Substantival (nominal) adverbs

There are two types of adverbs formed from nouns.

1 Those with various endings, prefixes and prepositions:

зими	zimi	in winter
изјутра	izjutra	in the morning
кришом	krišom	by stealth, secretly
лети	leti	in summer
напoкoн	napokon	finally, in the end

напоље	napolje	outside
натраг	natrag	back, backwards
низбрдо	nizbrdo	downhill
ноћу	noću	in the night, by night
оберучке	oberučke	with both hands
одмах	odmah	immediately
по подне	po podne	in the afternoon
поименце	poimence	by name, particularly
прекисноћ	preksinoć	night before last
прексутра	preksutra	the day after tomorrow
прекјуче	prekjuče	the day before yesterday
синоћ	sinoć	last night
сутра	sutra	tomorrow
сутрадан	sutradan	the next day
увек	uvek	always
узастопце	uzastopce	one after another, successively
узбрдо	uzbrdo	uphill
јутро	ujutro	in the morning

2 And those ending with -c/s:

пролетос	proletos	this spring
летос	letos	this summer
јесенас	jesenas	this autumn
зимус	zimus	this winter
ноћас	noćas	this night/tonight
јутрос	jutros	this morning
вечерас	večeras	this evening

10.2 Adjectival adverbs

Adjectival adverbs are formed from either indefinite neuter nominative singular adjectives:

Добро пева.	Dobro peva.	(He/she) sings well.
Лепо је украсила јелку.	Lepo je ukrasila jelku.	She decorated the Christmas tree <i>beautifully</i> . (<i>nice</i>)

in which case the stress between the adjective and the adverb may be different:

Ово је јако дете.	Ovo je jáko dete.	This is a <i>strong</i> child. (adj.)
Јако си га ударио.	Jáko si ga udario.	You hit him <i>hard</i> . (<i>strongly</i>) (adv.)

or from definite masculine nominative singular adjectives, most of which end in **ски/ski**, **чки/čki** and **шки/ški**:

Спортски се понашао.	Sportski se ponašao.	He behaved in a <i>sports-like manner</i> .
Дамски се обукла.	Damski se obukla.	She dressed in a <i>lady-like manner</i> .

in which case there is no difference in stress between the adjective and the adverb.

Adverbs may also have a comparative and superlative degree, which is formed in the same manner as with adjectives:

добро – dobro	боље – bolje	најбоље – najbolje	well/better/best
брзо – brzo	брже – brže	најбрже – najbrže	quickly/more quickly/most quickly

The prefix **пре/pre-** and preposition **по/по** indicate respectively an excessive (too) and an intermittent frequency of the action described by the verb:

Прерано сте стигли.	Prerano ste stigli.	You arrived <i>too early</i> .
Добру ракију треба пити по мало.	Dobru rakiju treba piti po malo.	Good brandy should be drunk <i>a little at a time</i> .

10.3 Pronominal adverbs

Pronominal adverbs are formed from the basic stem of pronouns to which particular endings are added to indicate place, direction, time, manner and extent:

Question Pronoun Adverb

	Place	Direction	Time	Manner	Extent
КОЈИ? koji? which?	ТУ tu here	ОТУД(А) otud(a) from that direction	ТАМО/ТУДА tamo/tuda there/that way	ТАКО tako in that way/ like that/so	ТОЛИКО toliko so much/ to that extent
	ОВАЈ ovaj this	ОВАМО/ОВУДА ovamo/ovuda over here/this way	ТАДА tada then, at that time	ОВАКО ovako thus/in this way	ОВОЛИКО ovoliko this much
	ОДАВДЕ odavde from here				
	ОНДЕ onde there	ОНАМО/ОНУДА onamo/onuda over there/ that way	ОНДА onda then	ОНАКО onako thus/in that way	ОНОЛИКО onoliko that much
	ОДАНДЕ odande from there/ that direction				
КО ko	ГДЕ gde	КАМО/КУДА kamo/kuda	КАДА kada	КАКО kako	КОЛИКО koliko

Question Pronoun Adverb

Question	Pronoun	Adverb	Direction	Time	Manner	Extent
			откуда otkud(a) from whence/ how come?			
	ико iko anyone	игде igde anywhere	икамо/икуда ikamo/ikuda anywhere/by any route	икада ikada ever/any time	икако ikako in any way	иколико ikoliko in any amount/ even a little
	неко neko someone	негде negde somewhere	некамо/некуда nekamo/nekuda somewhere/by some route	некада nekada sometime	некако nekako in some way/ somehow	неколико nekoliko some/several
	нико niko no-one	нигде negde nowhere	никамо/никуда nikamo/nikuda nowhere/by no route	никада nikada never	никако nikako in no way	николико nikoliko to no extent/ none at all
	свако svako everyone	свуда/свугде svuda/svugde everywhere	свакамо svakamo everywhere/ every way	свакада svakada always	свакако svakako in every way/ of course	свеколико svekoliko completely/ entirely
						These are rarely used.

10.4 Verbal adverbs

There are four types of participles in the Serbian language, all of which are derived from verbs. Two of these are adjectival forms are known as verbal adjectives (see Section 9.8 Verbal adjectives). The other two are adverbial forms, and are known as adverbial participles or verbal adverbs. These adverbial forms are derived from verbs, they have no number or gender, and are indeclinable. There are two types of verbal adverbs.

10.4.1 The present verbal adverb

Also referred to as the present participle, or the declinable active participle of simultaneous action, this verbal adverb describes an action occurring at the same time as that of the main verb. It relates to present or contemporaneous time and translates into English as ‘whilst’ or with the verbal suffix ‘-ing’.

Ходајући по леду, дечак је склизнуо и пао.	Hodajući po ledu, dečak je skliznuo i pao.	<i>Whilst walking on the ice, the boy slipped and fell.</i>
Читајући новине, заспала је.	Čitajući novine, zaspala je.	<i>Whilst reading the newspapers, she fell asleep.</i>

In addition to denoting the simultaneous aspect of an action, this verbal participle can also describe:

- 1 The manner in which the action occurs:

Отишли су у град певајући.	Otišli su u grad pevaјуći.	<i>They went to town (whilst) singing.</i>
---------------------------------------	---------------------------------------	--

- 2 The condition under which the action occurs:

Радећи непрекидно, можемо да успемо.	Radeći neprekidno, možemo da uspemo.	<i>(Whilst) working continuously, we can succeed.</i>
---	---	---

- 3 The cause or reason why the action occurs:

Плачући од жалости, жена се срушила.	Plачуći od žalosti, žena se srušila.	<i>(Whilst) crying with grief, the woman collapsed.</i>
---	---	---

The rule in Serbian is similar to that in English: the understood subject of the adverb should be the same as the subject of the main verb.

If it is not, this needs to be explained with a new clause or sentence. However, although grammatically incorrect, there are exceptions to this rule. In the following instances, the two verbs share a logical subject:

Заболела га је	Zabolela ga је	His head started hurting
глава гледајући	glava gledajući	<i>whilst looking at the screen.</i>
у екран.	u ekran.	

This adverbial form can be placed either before or after the main verb in the sentence. When it is used after the main verb, no punctuation is required. However, when it occurs before the main verb, a comma separates the two:

Иzlazeћи из воде,	Izlazeći iz vode,	<i>(Whilst) coming out of</i>
гласно је удахнуо.	glasno је udahnuo.	<i>the water, he inhaled loudly.</i>

Удахнуо је гласно	Udahnuo је glasno,	He inhaled loudly
изlazeћи из воде.	izlazeći iz vode.	<i>(whilst) coming out of the water.</i>

Adjectives are increasingly formed with this verbal participle. Many expressions formed with these adjectives are set expressions:

текући рачун	tekući račun	current account	(from
тећи	teći		to flow)
гостујућа екипа	gostujuća ekipa	visiting (away) team	'from
гостовати	gostovati		to visit'

When used as adjectives, these verbal adverbs take on all the characteristics of adjectives:

идући	idući	coming/next	(from
ићи	ići		to come/go)
следећи	sledeći	following	(from
следити	slediti		to follow)
могући	mogući	possible	(from
моћи	moći		to be able)

Formation of the present verbal adverb

As simultaneous action refers to a present or contemporaneous action, this participle is formed from the present tense of imperfective verbs only, by the addition of **-ћи/ћи** to the 3rd person plural.

Infinitive		Present tense	Participle	
3rd person plural				
ходати	to walk	ходају	ходајући	whilst
hodati		hodaју	hodaјући	walking
певати	to sing	певају	певајући	whilst
pevati		pevaју	pevaјући	singing
радити	to work	раде	радећи	whilst
raditi		rade	radeћи	working
плакати	to cry	плачу	плачући	whilst
plakati		plaču	plačuћи	crying
излазити	to exit/ come out of	излазе	излазећи	whilst
izlaziti		izlaze	izlazeћи	exiting

10.4.2 The past verbal adverb

Also referred to as the active participle of past action, this verbal adverb describes an action that has occurred *prior* to the action described by the main verb. It translates into English as ‘having’ followed by the verb, or ‘after . . .’ followed by a verb ending in ‘-ing’

Запаливши цигарету, странац ми је вратио упаљач. **Zapalivši cigaretu, stranac mi je vratio upaljač.** *Having lit the cigarette, the stranger returned the lighter to me.*

Ухвативши лопту, дете је потрчало. **Uhvativši loptu, dete je potrčalo.** *Having caught the ball, the child started running.*

When a verbal adverb is formed from an imperfective verb, the exact duration of the action it expresses should be stated:

Радивши 9 сати без престанка, човек је легао да се одмори. **Rativši 9 sati bez prestanka, човек je legao da se odmori.** *Having worked for 9 hours without a break, the man lay down to rest.*

This adverbial form is often replaced by **када/kada** (when), **док/dok** (while), **пошто/pošto** (after, since), **чим/čim** (as soon as):

Пробудивши се, девојчица је заплакала. **Probudivši se, devojčica je zaplakala.** *Having woken up, the little girl started crying.*

Када се пробудила, девојчица је заплакала.	Kada se probudila, devojčica је zaplakala.	When she woke up, the little girl started crying.
Показавши мајци модрицу, дечак је пошао у школу.	Pokazavši majci modricu, dečak је pošao u školu.	Having shown his mother the bruise, the boy set off to school.
Пошто је показао мајци модрицу, дечак је пошао у школу.	Pošto је pokazao majci modricu, dečak је pošao u školu.	After he showed his mother the bruise, the boy set off to school.

The verbal adverb can be placed either before or after the main verb in the sentence. When it is used after the main verb, no punctuation is required. When it occurs before the main verb, a comma separates the two.

Оправши руке, Мирко је сео да једе.	Opravši ruke, Mirko је seo да jede.	Having washed his hands, Mirko sat down to eat.
Мирко је сео да једе оправши руке.	Mirko је seo да jede opravši ruke.	Mirko sat down to eat <i>having washed</i> his hands.

Infrequently, these verbal adverbs may also be used as adjectives. An example of this is the adjective **бивши, бивша, бивше/бивши, бивша, бивше** (former, past) from **бити/бити** (to be).

Formation of the past verbal adverb

This verbal adverb is formed from the infinitive stem of mainly perfective verbs (although it can be formed from both aspects) by the addition of **-вши/вši** (after a vowel) or **-авши/авši** (after a consonant). Sometimes **-в/в** or **-ав/ав** may be added respectively.

Infinitive	Infinitive stem	Participle	
запалити	запали	запаливши	to (set) light (to)
zapaliti	zapali	zapalivši	
радити	ради	радивши	to work
raditi	radi	radivši	
пробудити	пробуди	пробудивши	to wake up
probuditi	probudi	probudivši	
опрати	опра	оправши	to wash
oprati	opra	opravši	

Prepositions

Prepositions indicate the position, direction, time or manner in which one noun or pronoun relates to another noun or pronoun. They cannot be placed independently of a noun or pronoun, but come before it. Prepositions can link the noun or pronoun either to another noun or to a verb or other parts of the sentence.

Prepositions have no gender or number and do not inflect. They have an unchanging form (with the exception of a few prepositions, such as *c/s* and *к/k* which can also take the form *ca/sa* and *ka/ka*).

Prepositions reflect a relationship between:

- 1 Living beings:

Јелена седи испред Марка.	Jelena sedi ispred Marka.	Jelena is sitting <i>in front of</i> Marko.
--------------------------------------	--------------------------------------	---

- 2 Non-living things:

Улица пролази кроз град.	Ulica prolazi kroz grad.	The street passes <i>through</i> town.
-------------------------------------	-------------------------------------	--

- 3 Living and non-living things:

Она седи поред реке.	Ona sedi pored reke.	She is sitting <i>by the</i> river.
---------------------------------	---------------------------------	-------------------------------------

Although one preposition generally stands with one noun or pronoun, when linked by a conjunction two prepositions can stand with just one noun or pronoun:

Испред и иза куће је стајало смеће.	Ispred i iza kuće je stajalo smeće.	There was rubbish <i>in front of and behind</i> the house.
--	--	--

Prepositions can be divided into two groups:

- 1 Simple prepositions;
- 2 Compound prepositions.

Some prepositions are used with only one case, but others appear in more than one case. Only in the nominative and the vocative cases are prepositions not used.

II.1 Simple prepositions

Simple prepositions consist of one word only:

из iz from, out of

Several simple prepositions, **с(а)/s(a)** (with, off, from), **к(а)/k(a)** (towards), **под(а)/pod(a)** (under, underneath) have a final **a** in some instances. Although this use may be optional, there are certain situations in which it is required:

с(а) s(a) The final **a** is required when the word following the preposition begins with any of the following letters: **с/s, ш/š, з/z, ж/ž**:

Враћамо се са села./Vraćamo se sa sela.
We're returning from the village.

к(а) k(a) The final **a** is required when the word following the preposition begins with any of the following letters: **г/g, х/h, к/k**:

Јахачи су кренули ка коњима./
Jahači su krenuli ka konjima.
The riders set off towards the horses.

под(а) pod(a) The final **a** is required when the preposition is followed by the short form of a personal pronoun or by the pronoun **МНОМ/мном**:

Пода мном није било ничега./
Poda mnom nije bilo ničega.
There was nothing below me.

Some simple prepositions govern only one case, while some govern more than one case:

Марија је ишла са пријатељицама у биоскоп.	Марија је išla sa prijateljicama u bioskop.	Maria went with her friends to the cinema.
---	--	--

Радник је пао са мердевина.	Radnik је пао sa merdevina.	The worker fell off (of) the ladder.
------------------------------------	------------------------------------	--------------------------------------

11.2 Compound prepositions

Compound prepositions are either formed from two prepositions:

усред – у сред usred – u sred in the middle of, amidst

or they originate from a prepositional phrase:

упркос – у пркос uprkos – u prkos in spite of

The two prepositions acquire a somewhat new shade of meaning when combined:

крај kraj next to, beside

покрај pokraj alongside

All compound prepositions govern the genitive case (see Section 7.3.2 Genitive case) except for **упркос/uprkos**, which may also take the dative case (see Section 7.3.3 Dative case).

11.3 Accentuation

Prepositions act as proclitics in that they are words which are linked in meaning to the word immediately following them. As such, they do not normally carry stress. There are, however, instances when they are stressed.

When the first syllable of the following word is rising, the preposition will normally carry no stress:

браќу bráku marriage

у браќу u bráku in marriage

However, when a preposition occurs immediately before a word which normally has a falling stress on the first syllable, the stress might fall on to the preposition. In this case, the preposition would either have a short falling (˘) or a short rising stress (ˆ):

сўнце sŭnce sun

на сўнце nà sŭnce in the sun

If the preposition is bi- or tri-syllabic, the stress will fall on the last syllable if it is a rising accent, or on the first syllable if it is a falling accent, though neither shift is very frequent nowadays:

нама nama us

међу нама međù nama between us

11.4 Prepositions through the cases

Prepositions are not straightforward to learn. Their meaning does not always translate easily nor is it necessarily set. It is therefore recommended that attention should be paid to the use of prepositions in any text one comes across and that these examples be taken into consideration when learning prepositions.

The following prepositions govern the genitive:

без	bez	without
близу	blizu	near
ван	van	outside
до	do	up to, as far as, until, before, to, next to
дуж	duž	alongside of
из	iz	behind
иза	iza	behind
изван	izvan	outside of
изнад	iznad	above
између	između	between, among
због	zbog	because of
код	kod	at, with, by
крај	kraj	beside, near
место	mesto	instead of, in place of
наврх	navrh	on the top of
надомак	nadomak	in the vicinity of
након	nakon	following, at the end of
насред	nasred	in the middle of
насупрот	nasuprot	opposite
ниже	niže	below, beneath
од	od	from, of
око	oko	around, about
осим	osim	except

поврх	povrh	over, above
покрај	pokraj	alongside
попут	poput	like
поред	pored	next to, in addition to
после	posle	after
пре	pre	before
преко	preko	across, over
против	protiv	against, opposite, for
ради	radi	for the sake of
с(а)	s(a)	from, off
уочи	uoči	on the eve of
усред	usred	in the middle of

Отишао је на посао без кравате.

Otišao je na posao bez kravate.

He went to work without a tie.

Дуж друма је стајао човек до човека.

Duž drumа je stajao čovek do čoveka.

All along the road people were standing next to each other.

Изнад нас је пролетео авион.

Iznad nas je proleteo avion.

A plane flew above us.

Пробудила их је галама усред ноћи.

Probudila ih je galama usred noći.

The noise woke them up in the middle of the night.

После ручка идемо у парк.

Posle ručka idemo u park.

After lunch we're going to the park.

Имам лек против мамурлука.

Imam lek protiv mamurluka.

I have a cure for hangovers.

Он то ради ради тебе.

On to radi radi tebe.

He is doing that for your sake.

Разишли смо се због његове мајке.

Razišli smo se zbog njegove majke.

We parted because of his mother.

Добићеш поклон уочи Божића.

Dobićeš poklon uoči Božića.

You will get your gift on Christmas Eve.

The following prepositions govern the dative:

к(а)	к(а)	towards, to (direction) (used mainly with verbs of motion)
према	prema	towards, to (direction)
насупрот	nasuprot	opposite (used increasingly with the genitive)
надомак	nadomak	in the vicinity of (used increasingly with the genitive)
упркос	uprkos	in spite of
према	prema	according to, towards, opposite

Он гледа према граду.	Он гледа prema gradu.	He is looking towards town.
Окрени се ка прозору.	Okreni se ka prozoru.	Turn towards the window.
Завршили смо посао упркос лошем времену.	Završili smo posao uprkos lošem vremenu.	We finished the job in spite of the bad weather.

The following prepositions govern the accusative:

за	za	for
кроз	kroz	through, over
међу	među	together with, between, among
на	na	on, in, onto, to (with motion)
над	nad	above, over (with motion)
низ	niz	down
о	o	against (to lean against)
по	po	for, to collect, gather, pick up
под	pod	under (with motion)
пред	pred	in front of (with motion)
у	u	in, into (when it expresses motion)
уз	uz	alongside of (upward direction), together, near, up
Уђите у воз чим стигне.	Uđite u voz čim stigne.	Get onto the train as soon as it arrives.
Идемо на паузу.	Idemo na pauzu.	We're going on (our) break.

У 3 сата идем по децу.	U tri sata idem po decu.	At 3 o'clock I'm going to pick up the children.
Пењаћемо се уз планину.	Penjaćemo se uz planinu.	We'll climb up the mountain.

The following prepositions govern the instrumental:

за	za	behind, following
међу	među	between, amongst
над	nad	above, over (denotes position)
под	pod	under (denotes position)
пред	pred	in front of, before (denotes position)
с(а)	s(a)	with

Над градом се наоблачило.	Nad gradom se naoblačilo.	The clouds gathered above the town.
Дуго смо стајали под кишобраном.	Dugo smo stajali pod kišobranom.	We stood under the umbrella for a long time.
Деца су се играла за кућом.	Deca su se igrala za kućom.	The children played behind the house.
Они чекају пред болницом.	Oni čekaju pred bolnicom.	They're waiting in front of the hospital.

The following prepositions govern the locative:

на	na	on, at (location)
о	o	about, concerning,
по	po	in accordance with, through, all over, on top of, around
при	pri	at, near, adjoining, a part of
у	u	in, into (location)

Скини капу при уласку у цркву.	Skini kapu pri ulasku u crkvu.	Take your hat off on entering church.
Управо смо говорили о теби.	Upravo smo govorili o tebi.	We've just been talking about you.
Шетали смо се по граду.	Šetali smo se po gradu.	We walked around town.
Заборавила сам кључеве на столу.	Zaboravila sam ključeve na stolu.	I forgot my keys on the table.
Сладолед је у фрижидеру.	Sladoleđ je u frižideru.	The ice-cream is in the fridge.

Conjunctions

Conjunctions are divided into two main categories: coordinating conjunctions, which connect two independent clauses of equal status, and subordinating conjunctions, which connect a dependent clause to a main clause.

Each of these groups of conjunctions can generally be divided into six sub-groups. In addition to these sub-groups, there are also conjunctions used when asking questions as well as when connecting corresponding clauses.

12.1 Coordinating conjunctions

Coordinating conjunctions connect two independent clauses of equal status and they include the following:

1 The 'and' conjunctions:

и	i	and
а	a	and (requires a difference), while
те	te	and, and so
и ... и	i ... i	both ... and
како ... тако	kako ... tako	both ... and, as ... so
Марио и Нада су муж и жена.	Mario i Nada su muž i žena.	Mario <i>and</i> Nada are husband <i>and</i> wife.
Марио је из Сплита а Нада је из Ниша.	Mario je iz Splita a Nada je iz Niša.	Mario is from Split <i>and</i> (while) Nada is from Niš.
И он и она воле море.	I on i ona vole more.	<i>Both</i> he <i>and</i> she love the sea.

Како Марио тако и *Kako Mario tako i* *Both Mario and*
Нада воли море. *Nada voli more.* *Nada love the sea.*

2 The 'but' conjunctions:

а*	а*	but*
али**	ali**	but
него	nego	but (comes after a negative first clause and corrects a wrong impression)
но	no	but
већ	već	see него/nego
па	pa	but, and also, and so
(и)пак	(i)pak	but, nevertheless
па ипак	pa ipak	and yet
док	dok	whereas
само	samo	only
ма	ma	at least
макар	makar	at least

* This form of 'but' is not strong as it does not indicate total opposition.

** This is the most common form of 'but'.

Он је дошао а њих нема.	On je došao a njih nema.	He came <i>but</i> they are not here.
Миленко је добар човек али је наиван.	Milenko je dobar čovек ali je naivan.	Milenko is a good man <i>but</i> he is naïve.
То није моје него његово.	To nije moje nego njegovo.	It's not mine <i>but</i> his.
Она је вредна док њена сестра није.	Ona je vredna dok njena sestra nije.	She is hardworking <i>whereas</i> her sister is not.
Уморан сам но ћу те сачекати.	Umoran sam no ću te sačekati.	I am tired <i>but</i> I'll wait for you.

3 The 'either/or' conjunctions:

или	ili	or
или . . . или	ili . . . ili	either . . . or

било ... било	bilo ... bilo	either ... or
ни	ni	neither
ни ... ни	ni ... ni	neither ... nor
нити ... нити	niti ... niti	neither ... nor

Дођи или нам пошаљи новац.	Dođi ili nam pošalji novac.	Come or send us the money.
Они ће доћи или код мене или код тебе.	Oni će doći ili kod mene ili kod tebe.	They will come either to your place or to mine.
Ни Ана ни Марко нису знали колико је сати.	Ni Ana ni Marko nisu znali koliko je sati.	Neither Ana nor Marko knew what the time was.
Нити је њему нити је њој то било важно.	Niti je njemu niti je njoj to bilo važno.	Neither he nor she thought it was important.

4 The **да/da** conjunction:

да*	da*	that
што*	što*	that, that which, that (for) the fact that (used after verbs and adjectives showing emotion or feeling: бринүти се/brinuti se (to be worried), радовати се/radovati se (to be glad, to rejoice), мило/milo (glad), драго/drago (glad), жао/žao (sorry), etc.)
да	da	in order to
да	da	let's (do something)
да	da	(used to connect present tense verbs)

* These conjunctions are used to introduce a subordinate clause.

Рекао је да ће доћи.	Rekao je da će doći.	He said (<i>that</i>) he will come.
Радујем се што вас видим.	Radujem se što vas vidim.	I'm glad to (<i>that I</i>) see you.

5 The 'therefore' conjunctions:

дакле	dakle	and so, thus, therefore
зато	zato	therefore, that's why
стога	stoga	therefore

Уморан је зато плаче. **U Moran je zato plače.** He is tired, *therefore* he is crying.

Рекли сте да одлазите стога смо поранили. **Rekli ste da odlazite stoga smo poranili.** You said you were leaving, *therefore* we came early.

6 The 'although' conjunctions:

иако **iako** although, though

мада **mada** although, though

премда **premda** although, though

Иако је било вруће, носили смо џемпере. **Iako je bilo vruće, nosili smo džempere.** *Although* it was hot, we wore sweaters.

Сео је још два сата мада је знао да каснимо. **Sedeo je još dva sata mada je znao da kasnimo.** He sat for two more hours, *although* he knew we were late.

12.2 Subordinating conjunctions

Subordinating conjunctions connect a dependent clause to a main clause and consist of the following sub-groups:

1 Pertaining to time:

чим **čim** as soon as, when

док **dok** while

док не **dok ne** until

када, кад **kada, kad** when, while

откако **otkako** since

пре него што **pre nego što** before

тек **tek** just

тек што **tek što** just, only just, no sooner, hardly

Дошао сам чим сам чуо. **Došao sam čim sam čuo.** I came *as soon as* I heard.

Седните док чекате. **Sednite dok čekate.** Take a seat *while* you are waiting.

Остаћемо док не престане киша.	Ostaćemo dok ne prestane kiša.	We will stay <i>until</i> the rain stops.
Откако је постала богата, никоме се не јавља.	Otkako је postala bogata, nikome се не јавља.	Since she became rich, she doesn't speak to anyone.
Тек што смо стигли, морали смо да кренемо.	Teko što смо stigli, morali смо да кренемо.	We had <i>just</i> arrived and we had to leave.

2 Used for comparisons, the 'than' conjunctions:

него	nego	than
неголи	negoli	than
а камоли	a kamoli	let alone, not to mention
Више волим чоколаду него сладолед.	Više volim čokoladu nego sladoled.	I like chocolate more <i>than</i> ice cream.
Не воли себе а камоли друге.	Ne voli себе a kamoli друге.	He doesn't love himself, <i>let alone</i> others.

3 The 'because' conjunctions:

јер*	jer*	because
пошто	pošto	since, because, after
тако да	tako da	so (that)
зато што	zato što	because, for that reason

* *јер/jer* is a milder form of 'because', expressing not the cause but the reason.

Она не може да дође на телефон јер је у купатилу.	Ona не може да дође на телефон јер је у kupatilu.	She cannot come to the phone <i>because</i> (she) is in the bathroom.
Деца су гладна тако да морамо да пожуримо.	Deca су gladna тако да морамо да požurimo.	The children are hungry so we must hurry.
Зашто? Зато што!	Zašto? Зато што!	Why? <i>Because!</i>
Закаснио је на воз зато што се успавао.	Zakasnio је на воз зато што се успавао.	He was late for the train <i>because</i> he overslept.

4 The 'if' conjunctions:

ако **ako** if**кад** **kad** if (were to)**да** **da** if (had, had been)**Ићи ћемо у биоскоп ако стигнете на време.****Ići ćemo u bioskop ako stignete na vreme.**We will go to the cinema *if* you arrive on time.**Да сте стигли на време, отишли бисмо у биоскоп.****Da ste stigli na vreme, otišli bismo u bioskop.***Had* you arrived on time, we would have gone to the cinema.

5 The 'how' conjunctions:

како **kako** how, like, as**као** **kao** how, like, as**као што** **kao što** as**као да** **kao da** as if**Гледала је децу како се играју.****Gledala je decu kako se igraju.**She watched the children *as* they played.**Понашали су се као да су знали шта се догодило.****Ponašali su se kao da su znali šta se dogodilo.**They acted (behaved) *as if* they knew what had happened.**Као што знате, ми смо позната фирма.****Kao što znate, mi smo poznata firma.**

As you know, we are a well-known firm.

6 The 'in order to' conjunctions:

да/да би **da/da bi** to, in order to**како би** **kako bi** so as to**Морали су да се сликају да би добили пасоше.****Morali su da se slikaju da bi dobili pasoše.**They had to have their pictures taken *in order* to get their passports.

Miscellaneous conjunctions:

нека **neka** let (it be), and (let)**макар** **makar** although, though, at least, even though**бар, барем** **bar, barem** at least

Дуг је пут, нека се добро одморе.	Dug je put, neka se dobro odmore.	The journey is long, let them rest well.
Назови ме макар било касно.	Nazovi me makar bilo kasno.	Call me even if it's late.
Напиши нам барем једно писмо.	Napiši nam barem jedno pismo.	Write us at least one letter.

Conjunctions used when asking questions:

да ли	da li	whether
где	gde	where
одакле	odakle	from where
откуд	otkud	whence, how come
ко	ko	who
што/шта	što/šta	what, why
куда	kuda	whither – where to

Да ли му је помогао брат да купи кућу?	Da li mu je pomogao brat da kupi kuću?	Did his brother help him to buy the house?
Одакле су Марко и Нада?	Odakle su Marko i Nada?	Where are Marko and Nada from?
Откуд ви овде?	Otkud vi ovde?	How come you are here?
Куда иду деца на одмор?	Kuda idu deca na odmor?	Whither are the children going for their holidays?

12.3 Differences in usages of *што/što* and *који/koji*

Што/što (which) is a relative conjunction used in relative clauses to link a dependent clause to the main clause. **Који/koji** (which, who) is a relative pronominal adjective and it also is used to link a dependent clause to the main clause. However, there is difference as to when each should be used.

Relative clauses describe or provide information about something or someone that has usually already been specified in the main clause.

This is Jane *who* drives me to work.

I've just finished reading a novel *which* I enjoyed very much.

In both of these sentences, the words ‘who’ and ‘which’ refer to the noun preceding them. In Serbian the relative pronominal adjective **који/koji** would be used in both cases:

Ово је Џејн, која ме вози на посао.	Ovo je Džejn, koja me vozi na posao.	This is Jane <i>who</i> drives me to work.
Управо сам прочитао роман, који ми је јако пријао.	Upravo sam pročitao roman, koji mi je jako prijao.	I've just finished reading a novel <i>which</i> I enjoyed very much.

Since **који/koji** is an adjective, it reflects gender and number and declines as an adjective.

However, instead of the above sentences, consider the following:

Jane drives fast, *which* scares me.

The food finally arrived, *which* made us all happy.

‘Which’ relates to the verb and not the noun in the previous clause. In these instances, the relative conjunction **што/što** would be used:

Џејн вози брзо, што ме плаши.	Džejn vozi brzo, što me plaši.	Jane drives fast, <i>which</i> scares me.
Храна је коначно стигла, што нас је све обрадовало.	Храна је коначно stigla, što nas je sve obradovalo.	The food finally arrived, <i>which</i> made us all happy.

Unlike **који/koji**, **што/što** has no gender, number, nor case. It remains unchanged in all cases.

Што/što as a relative conjunction is also used after the words **нешто/nešto** (something), **то/to** (that – determiner), **ово/ovo** (this over here), **оно/ono** (that over there), and wherever something is not named:

Он је ипак постигао нешто, што не може да се каже и за тебе.	Он је ипак postigao nešto, što ne može da se kaže i za tebe.	He still achieved <i>something, which</i> can't be said about you.
---	---	--

Both **који/koji** and **што/što** have other uses, i.e. **који/koji** as an interrogative (see Section 8.6 Interrogative pronouns), and **што/što** as a conjunction used to replace **да/da** (that) after verbs expressing emotion or feelings: **бринути се/brinuti se** (to worry), **радовати се/radovati se** (to be glad, to rejoice), and following constructions in the dative case which express emotion or feelings: **мило/milo** (glad), **драго/drago** (glad), **жао/žao** (sorry), etc.

Она се *брине што*
јој се ниси јавио.

Ona se brine što
joj se nisi javio.

She is *worried that*
you haven't called her.

Радујемо се што
сте положили испит.

Radujemo se što
ste položili ispit.

We are *glad that* you
passed your exam.

Enclitics

Although the structure of a sentence in Serbian generally follows the basic Subject, Verb, Object word order, it is by no means rigid or fixed, and the language, in fact, moves quite freely with respect to this structure:

Милан је купио кућу у јуну.	Milan je kupio kuću u junu.	Milan bought a house in June.
Кућу је Милан купио у јуну.	Kuću je Milan kupio u junu.	The house Milan bought in June.
У јуну је Милан кућу купио.	U junu je Milan kuću kupio.	In June Milan (the house) bought.

In contrast to this generally flexible word order, there exists a fixed order with respect to the use of enclitics, both relative to each other and relative to the other elements in the sentence.

As words consisting of one or two syllables, enclitics, though written separately, cannot stand on their own in a sentence. They are dependent on the word preceding them (while proclitics, e.g. prepositions, are dependent on the word following them). Although proclitics may take on the accent of the word following them (see Sections 8.1.3 Unstressed personal pronouns and 11.3 Accentuation), enclitics never carry an accent themselves.

Деца су изашла на сунце.	Deca su izašla na sunce.	The children went out <i>into</i> the sun. (proclitic)
Рекао ми је да ће закаснити.	Rekao mi je da će zakasniti.	He told <i>me</i> he would be late. (enclitic)

Due to this close dependency on the word preceding them, and their taking second position with regard to it, enclitics are known as second-position clitics. Although this strict word order relevant to enclitics is in such contrast to the otherwise quite free word order of the language, it must be respected and understood in order to both speak and learn the language correctly and with understanding.

13.1 Order and importance of enclitics

There are four types of enclitics in Serbian. An enclitic can never begin a sentence (or clause), but takes second position to the word beginning the sentence. Enclitics appear in the following order:

- 1 Interrogative enclitic – particle **ли/li**: when present, this enclitic stands in first position in relation to all the other enclitics. The particle **ли/li** is only used when a question is being asked:

Хоћете ли да идете на плажу данас?	Hoćete li da idete na plažu danas?	<i>Will you go to the beach today?</i>
---	---	--

Je ли идете на плажу данас?	Je li idete na plažu danas?	<i>Are you going to the beach today?</i>
------------------------------------	------------------------------------	--

Идете ли данас на плажу?	Idete li danas na plažu?	<i>Are you going to the beach today?</i>
---------------------------------	---------------------------------	--

Although the word order in all three sentences is different, the particle **ли/li**, as an enclitic, is always in the second position. Note that in the second example, the **је/je** is not a verbal enclitic (see Sections 8.1 Personal pronouns and 8.1.4 Order of unstressed personal pronouns), but part of an interrogative form with the verb **бити/biti** (to be) (see Section 6.14 Formation of the interrogative).

- 2 Verbal enclitics – auxiliary verbs used in forming various tenses:

Past tense: **сам/sam, си/si, је/je, смо/смо, сте/ste, су/su**

Future tense: **ћу/ће, ћеш/ћеš, ће/ће, ћемо/ћемо, ћете/ћете, ће/ће**

Aorist tense: **бих/bih, би/bi, би/би, бисмо/bисмо, бисте/bисте, би/би**

These take second position in the enclitic word order. Since each sentence or clause will have only one subject, verbal enclitics will appear on their own and will not compete with another verbal enclitic for position. It is important to remember that the verbal enclitic **је/je** is excluded from this position in the word order, as it falls in the last position of the enclitic word order.

Да ли бисте желели парче торте?	Da li biste želeli parče torte?	<i>Would you like a piece of cake?</i>
--	--	--

Ја сам рекао да ћу да дођем.	Ja sam rekao da ću da dođem.	<i>I said that I will come.</i>
-------------------------------------	-------------------------------------	---------------------------------

- 3 Pronominal enclitics: the short or unstressed forms of personal pronouns are called pronominal enclitics (see Sections 8.1.3 Unstressed personal pronouns and 8.1.4 Order of unstressed personal pronouns). In position, they follow the verbal enclitics, in the following order:

Dative: **ми/ми, ти/ти, му/му, јој/јој, нам/нам, вам/вам, им/им**

Genitive and accusative: **ме/ме, те/те, га/га, је/је* or ју/ју*, нас/нас, вас/вас, их/их**

* ју/ју is used instead of је/је when the verbal JE is present.

Питала сам те. Pitala sam te. I asked you.

Да ли је Данко дао Стевану књигу? Da li je Danko dao Stevanu knjigu? Did Danko give Steven the book?

Јесте, дао му ју је. Jeste, dao mu ju je. Yes, he gave it (her) to him.

- 4 The reflexive form **се/се**: this enclitic, the short form of the reflexive pronoun **себе/sebe** (see Section 8.2 Reflexive pronouns), takes last position in the enclitic order:

Жалили смо му се на галаму. Žalili smo mu se na galamu. We complained to him about the noise.

The verbal enclitic **је/је**, 3rd person singular present tense form of the verb **бити/biti** (to be) also takes last position in the overall enclitic word order. When it follows the reflexive enclitic **се/се** it is generally omitted and **се/се** effectively remains in the last position:

Упитала се (је) да ли ће он да дође. Upitala se (je) da li će on da dođe. She asked herself whether he would come.

Жалио ми се (је) на галаму. Žalio mi se (je) na galamu. He complained to me about the noise.

In the above examples, the first word in the sentence was in the past tense, thus requiring the auxiliary verb **је/је**. However, as the enclitic **се/се** is also included in the sentence, the verbal enclitic **је/је** is omitted:

Упитала се Upitala se She asked herself

after which another clause was introduced with its own set of enclitics:

да ли ће он да дође.	da li će on da dođe.	<i>whether he would come.</i>
-----------------------------	-----------------------------	-------------------------------

The following rules apply to the use of enclitics:

- 1 An enclitic can never begin a sentence or an independent clause. In the initial position in the sentence or clause, various elements can stand including the subject, the main verb, a conjunction (in dependent clauses), etc. An enclitic can separate the subject if it consists of more than one word, but it can never separate a preposition from the noun it precedes. Nor can it separate a title from a person's name:

Добра му је вила оставила новчић.	Dobra mu je vila ostavila novčić.	The good fairy left <i>him</i> a coin.
На ручак су јој дошле обе сестре.	Na ručak su joj došle obe sestre.	For lunch both sisters came (<i>to her</i>).
Госпођа Јовановић му је дала писмо.	Gospođa Jovanović tu je dala pismo.	Mrs Jovanović gave <i>him</i> the letter.

- 2 Enclitics follow interrogatives (где/*gde* (where), одакле/*odakle* (from where), како/*kako* (how), чији/*čiji* (whose), etc.) and most conjunctions (да/*da* (that), кад/*kad* (when), ако/*ako* (if), јер/*jer* (because), etc.). Importantly, conjunctions а/*a* (but, and) and и/*i* (and) can never take initial position with respect to the enclitic word order. They are either followed by the long or stressed forms or another word has to take initial position before an enclitic can follow:

Они је воле, али му то није драго.	Oni je vole, ali tu to nije drago.	They like her, <i>but he</i> isn't pleased about it.
Они је воле, а њему то није драго.	Oni je vole, a njemu to nije drago.	They like her, <i>but he</i> isn't pleased about it.

But not:

Они је воле, а му то није драго.	Oni je vole, a tu to nije drago.
---	---

- 3 All enclitics which appear in a sentence or clause must be kept together. They are placed as close to the beginning of the sentence (or clause) as possible, and immediately follow the introductory word or phrase in that sentence:

Да ли си је се сетио?	Da li si je se setio?	<i>Did you remember her?</i>
------------------------------	------------------------------	------------------------------

- 4 The subject, if expressed, normally follows the enclitics, unless it is the initial word in the sentence:

Синоћ га је Миодраг видео.	Sinoć ga je Miodrag video.	<i>Last night Miodrag saw him.</i>
-----------------------------------	-----------------------------------	------------------------------------

Миодраг га је синоћ видео.	Miodrag ga je sinoć video.	<i>Miodrag saw him last night.</i>
-----------------------------------	-----------------------------------	------------------------------------

- 5 As a rule, the verbal enclitic form *je/je* does not take precedence over any other enclitic and never precedes pronominal enclitics, other verbal enclitics or *ce/se*.

Отац ми је дошао с пута.	Otac mi je došao s puta.	<i>Father has returned from his trip.</i>
---------------------------------	---------------------------------	---

Нервирао се (је) због тога.	Nervirao se (je) zbog toga.	<i>He was irritated because of that.</i>
------------------------------------	------------------------------------	--

- 6 When verbal and pronominal enclitics occur together, the verbal enclitic precedes the pronominal:

Волела сам га.	Volela sam ga.	<i>I loved him.</i>
-----------------------	-----------------------	---------------------

Сви смо га волели.	Svi smo ga voleli.	<i>We all loved him.</i>
---------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------------

- 7 Of the pronominal enclitics, the dative enclitics precede the accusative and genitive enclitics:

Ја сам му је обећао.	Ja sam mu je obećao.	<i>I've promised (it) f to him.</i>
-----------------------------	-----------------------------	-------------------------------------

Ми бисмо јој га послали да смо имали њену адресу.	Mi bismo joj ga poslali da smo imali njenu adresu.	<i>We would have sent (it) m/n to her had we had her address.</i>
--	---	---

- 8 When the negative past tense is used, the auxiliary verb is no longer considered an enclitic and can take first position in the sentence, followed by an enclitic if there is one:

Нисмо му се јавили.	Nismo mu se javili.	<i>We didn't say hello to him.</i>
----------------------------	----------------------------	------------------------------------

Није ми дао да платим.	Nije mi dao da platim.	<i>He didn't allow me to pay.</i>
-------------------------------	-------------------------------	-----------------------------------

Order of enclitics following the initial word:

Initial position	Verbal enclitics	Pronominal enclitics	Reflexive ce/se , or verbal je
	сам – sam	<i>Dative</i>	<i>Genitive or Accusative</i>
	си – si	ми – mi	ме – me
Да ли/Da li	смо – smo (past tense)	ти – ti	те – te
	сте – ste	му – mu	га – ga
Ако/Ako	су – su	joj – joj	je – je* or ju – ju*
	ћу – ћu	нам – nam	се – se
	ћеш – ћeš	вам – vam	је – je
Зимус/Zimus	ће – ће (future tense)	им – im	их – ih
	ћемо – ћemo		
	ћете – ћete		
Данас/Danas	ће – ће		
	бих – bih		
Јер/Јer	би – bi (aorist tense)		
	би – bi		
	бисмо – bismo		
	бисте – biste		
	би – bi		

* Her = **Jy/ju** is used before verbal **je**, if used at all.

Numerals

Four numeral forms are used:

- Cardinal numbers, **један/jedan** (one), **два/dva** (two), etc.;
- Ordinal numbers, **први/prvi** (first), **други/drugi** (second), etc.;
- Collective numerals, **двоје/dvoje** (a group of two mixed gender beings), **троје/troje** (a group of three mixed gender beings);
- Number nouns, **двојица/dvojica** (a group of two male human beings), **тројица/trojica** (a group of three male human beings), etc. There is no special number form for counting females.

14.1 Cardinal numbers and their declension

0	zero	нула nula	
1	one	један jedan	Behaves as adjective
2	two	два dva	Has some case endings
3	three	три tri	
4	four	четири četiri	
5	five	пет pet	
6	six	шест šest	
7	seven	седам sedam	

8	eight	осам osam
9	nine	девет devet
10	ten	десет deset
11	eleven	једанаест jedanaest
12	twelve	дванаест dvanaest
13	thirteen	тринаест trinaest
14	fourteen	четрнаест četrnaest
15	fifteen	петнаест petnaest
16	sixteen	шеснаест šesnaest
17	seventeen	седамнаест sedamnaest
18	eighteen	осамнаест osamnaest
19	nineteen	деветнаест devetnaest
20	twenty	двадесет dvadeset
21	twenty-one	двадесет (и) један dvadeset (i) jedan
22	twenty-two	двадесет (и) два dvadeset (i) dva
23	twenty-three	двадесет (и) три dvadeset (i) tri
24	twenty-four	двадесет (и) четири dvadeset (i) četiri
25	twenty-five	двадесет (и) пет dvadeset (i) pet

30	thirty	тридесет trideset	
40	forty	чetrдесет četrdeset	
50	fifty	педесет pedeset	
60	sixty	шездесет šezdeset	
70	seventy	седамдесет sedamdeset	
80	eighty	осамдесет osamdeset	
90	ninety	деведесет devedeset	
100	one hundred	сто/једна стотина sto/jedna stotina	Is a noun, with number, gender and case
200	two hundred	двеста(двесто)/ две стотине dvesta(dvesto)/ dve stotine	
300	three hundred	триста/три стотине trista/tri stotine	
400	four hundred	четиристо/четири стотине četiristo/četiri stotine	
500	five hundred	петсто/пет стотина petsto/pet stotina	
501	five hundred and one	петсто један petsto jedan	
1,000	one thousand	хиљаду/једна хиљада hiljadu/jedna hiljada	Is a noun, with number, gender and case
1,001	one thousand and one	хиљаду један hiljadu jedan	

2,000	two thousand	две хиљаде dve hiljade	
5,000	five thousand	пет хиљада pet hiljada	
10,000	ten thousand	десет хиљада deset hiljada	
100,000	one hundred thousand	сто хиљада sto hiljada	
1,000,000	one million	(један) милион (jedan) milion	Is a noun, with number, gender and case
1 + 9 zeros	one thousand million (UK) one billion (USA)	(једна) милијарда (jedna) milijarda	Is a noun, with number, gender and case
1 + 12 zeros	one billion (UK) one trillion (USA)	(један) билион (jedan) bilion	Is a noun, with number, gender and case

14.1.1 Numeral one

Number one, **један/jedan**, behaves as a true adjective, agreeing with the noun in gender and case:

Један човек	Jedan čovek	One man (nom. m)
Једна жена	Jedna žena	One woman (nom. f)
Једно дете	Jedno dete	One child (nom. n)
Возач једног аутобуса	Vozač jednog autobusa	The driver of one bus (gen. m)
Без једне терасе	Bez jedne terase	Without one terrace (gen. f)
У једном селу	U jednom selu	In one village (loc. n)

The verb following number one is in the singular and has gender (where appropriate):

Један човек је дошао.	Jedan čovek je došao.	One man came.
Једна жена је певала.	Jedna žena je pevala.	One woman sang.

All numbers ending in one (except compound number 11 ending in **неаст/neast**) follow the same rules:

Двадесет један аутобус је био на станици.	Dvadeset jedan autobus je bio na stanici.	Twenty-one buses were at the station.
Тридесет једна зграда је порушена.	Trideset jedna zgrada je porušena.	Thirty-one buildings were demolished.
Осамдесет једно дете је било на излету.	Osamdeset jedno dete je bilo na izletu.	Eighty-one children were at the picnic.

Number one, **један/jedan**, can also be used in the following ways:

- (a) As the indefinite article ‘a/an’:

Наишли су на једног просјака.	Naišli su na jednog prosjaka.	They came across a beggar.
--------------------------------------	--------------------------------------	----------------------------

- (b) As an adjective signifying ‘equality-sameness’, in which instance it can have a plural form:

Све ми је једно.	Sve mi je jedno.	It’s all the same to me.
Једних су родитеља.	Jednih su roditelja.	They are of the same parents.

- (c) With nouns in the plural that have a singular meaning (*pluralia tantum*):

Нашао је једне црне панталоне.	Našao je jedne crne pantalone.	He found a pair of black trousers.
Стајали су поред једних врата.	Stajali su pored jednih vrata.	They stood by a door.

- (d) As the pronoun ‘some’, when used independently:

Једни су стајали а једни су седели.	Jedni su stajali a jedni su sedeli.	Some were standing and some were sitting.
--	--	---

- (e) In the expression **један једини/jedan jedini**, the meaning is ‘one and only’:

То је био један једини пут да га је потражила.	To je bio jedan jedini put da ga je potražila.	It was the one and only time that she looked for him.
---	---	---

- (f) As an expression of affection or anger, meaning ‘you’ and used with the noun in the vocative case (the context and facial expression and intonation will indicate which effect is being expressed):

Будало једна! Budalo jedna! You fool!

The negative form of the numeral one, **ниједан/niјedan**, ‘not one, not a, none’, behaves exactly like **један/jedan**. The verb that follows it must be negated. When used with a preposition, the preposition must come between the prefix **ни/ni-** and the number **један/jedan**.

Ниједан човек Ниједан човек Not one man came.
није дошао. nije došao.

Ни на једно Ни на једно He didn't come for
пиће није дошао. piće nije došao. even one drink.

14.1.2 Numerals two, three and four and the numeral ‘both’

Numbers two, **два/dva**, three, **три/tri**, and four, **четири/četiri**, behave differently from number one and from numerals five, six, seven, etc.

The number two and the numeral ‘both’ have two forms. One form is used for both masculine and neuter nouns and the other is for feminine nouns:

- (a) The ending **-a** is added to the stem of masculine and neuter nouns and adjectives following the number two, **два/dva**, and the numeral ‘both’, **оба/oba**. This ending is only applied when the numbers are not declined:

два велика камиона	dva velika kamiona	two large trucks
два лепа села	dva lepa sela	two pretty villages
два директна преноса	dva direktna prenosa	two live broadcasts
оба студента	oba studenta	both students

- (b) The ending **-e/e** is added to the stem of regular feminine nouns and adjectives following the number two, **два/dva**, and the numeral ‘both’, **оба/oba**, while the ending **-и/i** is added to irregular feminine nouns (those ending in a consonant):

две велике куће	dve velike kuće	two large houses
две лепе ноћи	dve lepe noći	two beautiful nights
обе књиге	obe knjige	both books

Number two, **два/dva**, and the numeral ‘both’, **оба/oba**, decline in the following way:

	Masculine and neuter		Feminine	
Nom.	два камиона/ села	оба камиона/ села	две жене	обе жене
	dva kamiona/ sela	oba kamiona/ sela	dve žene	obe žene
Gen.	двају камиона/ села	(од) оба камиона/ села	двеју жена	(од) обе жене
	двају kamiona/ sela	обоје камиона/ села	dveju žena	обеју жена
		(od) oba kamiona/sela		(od) obe žene
		oboje kamiona/sela		obeju žena
Dat.	двама камионима/ селима	обома камионима/ селима	двема женама	обема женама
	dvama kamionima/ selima	oboma kamionina/ selima	dvema ženama	obema ženama
Acc.	два камиона/ села	оба камиона/ села	две жене	обе жене
	dva kamiona/ sela	oba kamiona/ sela	dve žene	obe žene
Voc.	два камиона/ села	оба камиона/ села	две жене	обе жене
	dva kamiona/ sela	oba kamiona/ sela	dve žene	obe žene
Inst.	двама камионима/ селима	обома камионима/ селима	двема женама	обема женама
	dvama kamionima/ selima	oboma kamionina/ selima	dvema ženama	obema ženama

Loc.	двама камионима/ селима	обома камионима/ селима	двема женама	обема женама
	dvama kamionima/ selima	oboma kamionina/ selima	dvema ženama	obema ženama

Although they are frequently used in the spoken language, the forms **обадва/obadva** and **обадве/obadve** for ‘both’ are considered to be incorrect.

Numbers three, **три/tri** and four, **четири/četiri** remain the same in form as they do not have gender. However, the nouns and adjectives that follow them take the same endings as for numeral two.

- (a) **три велика камиона** **tri velika kamiona** three large trucks
- три лепа села** **tri lepa sela** three pretty villages
- три директна преноса** **tri direktna prenosa** three live broadcasts
- (b) **три велике куће** **tri velike kuće** three large houses
- три лепе ноћи** **tri lepe noći** three beautiful nights

Although numbers three, **три/tri** and four, **четири/četiri** do decline, their declension is replaced by the number in the nominative which is preceded by the appropriate preposition denoting its function in the sentence. In the case of masculine and neuter nouns, they can be replaced by the collective numeral (see Section 14.4 Collective numerals):

Отишла је са четири жене.	Otišla je sa četiri žene.	She went <i>with four women.</i>
Упаковали су их у три кутије.	Upakovali su ih u tri kutije.	They packed them <i>in three boxes.</i>
Писао сам тројици мушкараца	Pisao sam trojici muškaraca.	I wrote to (a group of) <i>three men. (coll. num.)</i>

With numbers two, three and four and the numeral ‘both’, all nouns are followed by verbs in the plural. The gender ending of verbs agrees with the nouns, except in the masculine where the verb ending generally agrees with the ending **-a**, rather than the appropriate gender ending, which when used would not be considered incorrect:

Два/оба/три/четири млада војника су дошла.	Dva/oba/tri/četiri mlada vojnika su došla.	Two/both/three/ four young soldiers came.
---	---	---

Два/оба/три/четири детета су се играла.	Dva/oba/tri/četiri deteta su se igrala.	Two/both/three/four children played.
Две/обе/три/четири младе жене су чекале.	Dve/obe/tri/četiri mlade žene su čekale.	Two/both/three/ four young women waited.
Две/обе/три/четири лепе ноћи су прошле.	Dve/obe/tri/četiri lepe noći su prošle.	Two/both/three/ four beautiful nights went by.

The same applies to all numbers ending in two, three, four (except twelve, thirteen and fourteen which are compound numbers ending in **неаст/neast**):

Двадесет четири млада вука су дошла.	Dvadeset četiri mlada vuka su došla.	Twenty-four young wolves came.
Осамдесет три лепе ноћи су прошле.	Osamdeset tri lepe noći su prošle.	Eighty-three beautiful nights went by.

14.1.3 Numerals five, six, seven and onwards

Numerals five, six, seven, eight, nine, ten, eleven to nineteen and all other numerals ending in five, six, seven, eight, nine and zero are followed by adjectives and nouns in the genitive plural:

Пет добрих камиона.	Pet dobrih kamiona.	Five good trucks.
Осам лепих девојака.	Osam lepih devojaka.	Eight beautiful young women.
Двадесет седам малих острва.	Dvedeset sedam malih ostrva.	Twenty-seven small islands.

Although the adjectives and nouns related to these numerals are in the genitive plural, the numerals themselves are considered to be of singular neuter gender because the verb following them is of singular neuter gender:

Пет добрих камиона је стајало.	Pet dobrih kamiona je stajalo.	Five good trucks were standing.
Осам лепих девојака је чекало.	Osam lepih devojaka je čekalo.	Eight beautiful young women were waiting.
Двадесет седам малих острва је насељено.	Dvedeset sedam malih ostrva je naseljeno.	Twenty-seven small islands are populated.

Although used less frequently, for semantic congruency, the verb can also be in the plural, agreeing in gender with the noun:

Пет добрих камиона су стајали.	Pet dobrih kamiona su stajali.	Five good trucks were standing.
Осам лепих девојака су чекале.	Osam lepih devojaka su čekale.	Eight beautiful young women were waiting.
Двадесет седам малих острва су насељена.	Dvadeset sedam malih ostrva su naseljena.	Twenty-seven small islands are populated.

Cardinal numbers from eleven to nineteen are formed by adding the suffix **-наест/naest** to numbers 1–9:

једанаест	jedanaest	11
дванаест	dvanaest	12
шеснаест	šesnaest	16
осамнаест	osamnaest	18

A hundred (**стотина/stotina** – f), a thousand (**хиљада/hiljada** – f), a million (**милион/milion** – m) and a billion (**милијарда/milijarda** – f) are nouns used to express numbers. As such, they have number, gender and case endings.

Ишла је на демонстрацију са стотином других жена.	Izašla je na demonstraciju sa stotinom drugih žena.	She went to the demonstration with <i>a hundred</i> other women. (inst.)
Председник се обратио милионима.	Predsednik se obratio milionima.	The President addressed the <i>millions</i> . (dat.)

When used in the singular, the nouns **стотину/stotinu** (a hundred) and **хиљаду/hiljadu** (a thousand) have an **-y/u** ending (as in the feminine accusative):

Прошло је хиљаду ноћи.	Prošlo je hiljadu noći.	1,000 nights went by. (Verb neuter singular agreeing with хиљаду ноћи)
Прошла је хиљаду и једна ноћ.	Prošla je hiljadu i jedna noć.	1,001 nights went by. (Verb feminine singular agreeing једна ноћ)

14.2 Ordinal numbers and their declension

All ordinal numbers function as definite adjectives, taking the gender, number and case of the noun they qualify.

With the exception of numbers 1–4, ordinal numbers are derived from cardinal numbers to which the following suffixes are added:

Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
-и/i	-о/o	-а/a
	-е/e for third only	

Пети члан је стигао. **Peti član je stigao.** The *fifth* member arrived.

Десето дете се разболело. **Deseto dete se razbolelo.** The *tenth* child fell ill.

Петнаеста столица је сломљена. **Petnaesta stolica je slomljena.** The *fifteenth* chair was broken.

Ordinal numbers 1–4:

Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	
први	прво	прва	first
prvi	prvo	prva	
други	друго	друга	second
drugi	drugo	druga	
трећи	треће	трећа	third
treći	treće	treća	
четврти	четврто	четврта	fourth
četvrti	četvrto	četvrta	

Прва награда је најбоља. **Prva nagrada je najbolja.** The first prize is the best.

Мира је добила трећу награду за цртање. **Mira je dobila treću nagradu za crtanje.** Mira won the third prize for drawing.

In addition to being an ordinal number, **други/drugi** (second) also means ‘another, other/s, someone else’.

Купила је другу књигу од истог аутора. **Kupila je drugu knjigu od istog autora.** She bought the *second* book by the same author.

Други су купили исту књигу. **Drugi su kupili istu** књигу. *Others bought the same book.*

Cardinal numbers seven (**седам/sedam**) and eight (**осам/osam**) lose the -a and become **седма/sedma** and **осма/osma** in the feminine, **седми/sedmi** and **осми/osmi** in the masculine, and **седмо/sedmo** and **осмо/osmo** in the neuter.

The ending -e (rather than -o) for the neuter is used only for 'third' – **треће/trece**.

With compound numbers, only the last digit has the ordinal form.

Они станују на двадесет првом спрату. **Oni stanuju na** dvadeset prvom spratu. *They live on the twenty-first floor.*

The cardinal numbers **сто/sto** (one hundred), **хиљада/hiljada** (a thousand), **милион/milion** (a million) become ordinals **стоти/stoti**, **хиљадити/hiljaditi**, **милионити/milioniti** in the masculine:

Стоти путник се укрцао у авион. **Stoti putnik se** ukrao u avion. *The hundredth passenger boarded the plane.*

Сваки хиљадити потрошач је добио поклон. **Svaki hiljaditi** potrošac je dobio poklon. *Every thousandth customer received a gift.*

Written in a numerical form, ordinal numbers are followed by a full stop:

2003.

Ordinal numbers are used when expressing dates in answer to the question 'When?' with the noun following in the genitive:

Рођена је двадесет петог децембра. **Rođena je dvadeset** petog decembra. *She was born on 25th December.*

The cardinal number one, **један/jedan**, used together with the ordinal number two, **други/drugi** denote a relationship of reciprocity ('one another, each other . . .'):

Један другог су загрлили. **Jedan drugog** su zagrlili. *They embraced each other. (masc.)*

Помогли су један другом. **Pomogli su** jedan drugom. *(They) helped one another. (masc.)*

When using the expression 'For the first, second, third, etc., time . . .', the preposition **по/ро** is used with all ordinal numbers except the number one:

Срели су се први пут у новембру.	Sreli su se prvi put u novembru.	They met <i>for the first time</i> in November.
По трећи пут му говорим да затвори врата.	Po treći put mu govorim da zatvori vrata.	I'm telling him <i>for the third time</i> to close the door.

14.3 Fractions and decimal numbers

When the first number of the fraction is one, fractions in Serbian are expressed using a derived noun or ordinal number with an ending to agree with a feminine singular noun in the nominative case:

једна jedna one

The remaining part of the fraction is expressed with the ending in **-ина/ina**:

једна половина jedna polovina $\frac{1}{2}$ one-half

When the fraction begins with the numbers two, three or four, the cardinal number ending agrees with a feminine plural noun in the nominative case:

две dve two

and the derived noun ends in **-ине/ine**:

две трећине dve trećine $\frac{2}{3}$ two-thirds

Fractions beginning with three and four are formed in the same way.

With fractions beginning with five onwards, the ordinal number does not change, while the derived noun that follows it takes on the ending **-ина/ina**:

пет осмина pet osmina $\frac{5}{8}$ five-eighths

In Serbian full stops are used to indicate when a number has gone into the one thousand and over range, while commas are used to indicate decimal points.

In speaking, commas are expressed with either the word **кома/кома** or **зарез/zarez**:

2,3 два кома три dva koma tri 2.3 two point three

While zeros are both written and read out:

0,3 нула кома три nula koma tri 0.3 zero point three

14.4 Collective numerals

Collective numerals are used when referring to a group or collective of persons or animals of mixed gender and/or age.

Collective numerals range from two to ninety-nine. Numerals two, 'both' and three end in **-oje/-oje**, as do all collective numerals ending in numbers two and three, except the number twelve:

двоје	dvoje	a group of two
обоје	oboje	both
троје	troje	three
осамдесет двоје	osamdeset dvoje	eighty-two

and all others, excluding numerals ending in one, end in **-оро/oro**:

четворо	četvoro	a group of four
петоро	petoro	five
седморо	sedmoro	seven
десеторо	desetoro	ten
двадесеторо	dvadesetoro	twenty
тридесето петоро	trideset petoro	thirty-five

Collective numerals are also used with collective nouns (see Section 7.1), ending with the suffix **-a** and **-ад/ad** in the nominative singular:

троје браће	troje braće	(a group of) three brothers
седамнаесторо	sedamnaestoro	(a group of) seventeen lambs
јагњади	jagnjadi	

Note that the collective noun **деца/deca** cannot be used with cardinal numbers, but must be preceded by collective numerals from five onwards, while two to four can be expressed using the genitive singular of **дете/dete**:

два детета	dva deteta	two children
петоро деце	petoro dece	five children

Although there exists a declension for collective numerals through the cases, the dative and genitive cases are the only cases used where there is *no* appropriate preposition to precede the numeral, otherwise, prepositions are used with the collective in the accusative form followed by the genitive plural of most nouns:

Књига је за двоје студента.	Knjiga je za dvoje studenata.	The book is for the two students.
------------------------------------	--------------------------------------	-----------------------------------

Дао је књигу **Dao je knjigu** (He) gave the book
двома студентима. **dvoma studentima.** to the two students.

When the collective is declined, the noun following it is appropriately declined as well. Generally, smaller numbers are declined, while higher numbers are used only in the nominative and the accusative forms.

Collective numerals are neuter in gender and the verb is in the neuter singular. The noun that follows the collective, or pronoun or determiner (which would also be of neuter gender) that precedes it, is in the genitive plural.

То троје нас је **To troje nas je** *Those three saw us.*
видело. **videlo.**

Деветоро деце **Devetoro dece** *(A group of) nine*
је положило **je položilo** *children passed*
испите. **ispite.** *their exams.*

Нас осамнаесторо **Nas osamnaestoro** *We eighteen were*
је седело у чамцу. **je sedelo u čamcu.** *sitting in the boat.*

Петоро људи се **Petoro ljudi se** *Five people (of mixed*
пријавило. **prijavilo.** *gender) signed up.*

As distinguished from:

Пет људи се **Pet ljudi se** *Five men signed up.*
пријавило. **prijavilo.**

14.5 Number nouns

Number nouns apply only to animate nouns of masculine gender. They refer to a group of male human beings, described by the number noun formed with the suffix **-ица/ица**:

двојица **dvojica** a group of two masculine
gender beings

тројица **trojica** a group of three masculine
gender beings

петнаесторица **petnaestorica** a group of fifteen masculine
gender beings

Number nouns can be formed with all the numbers, excluding the number one and all numbers including it, up to but not including 100. These nouns belong to the third declension. The noun following number nouns is in the genitive plural. The verb is in the plural with the past participle ending in **-а** (although the masculine **и/и** ending would not be incorrect).

двојица другова *dvojica drugova* a group of two friends
су дошла *su došla* came

In addition to the above, other nouns are formed from cardinal and ordinal numbers with the suffixes **-ица/ica**, **-ац/ac**, **-ка/ka**:

седмица *sedmica* a week, a figure of seven
једанаестерац *jedanaesterac* a penalty kick
двојка *dvojka* the figure two

14.6 Multiplicatives

Multiplicatives in Serbian are formed in a similar manner to their English equivalents, ‘twofold, threefold, fivefold’, etc. – a number and the word ‘fold’ are linked to form one word. The **струки/struki** (‘-fold’) adjective follows a collective numeral, where **-o** links them to the number:

једноструки *jednostruki* singlefold
двоструки *dvostruki* twofold
четвороструки *četvorostruki* fourfold

The word **дупли/dupli** is the equivalent of the English ‘double’:

Дупли виски *Dupli viski* Double scotch on ice.
са ледом. *sa ledom.*

тродупли/trodupli (triple) is derived from it.

When functioning as adjectives, they have number and gender, as well as declension:

трострука превара *trostruka prevara* a triple (threefold)
 deception

Multiplicatives can also function as adverbs:

Троструко га *Trostruko ga* He deceived him
је преварио. *je prevario.* *threefold.*

14.7 Approximatives

Approximatives are numbers indicating an approximate quantity. There are two types of approximatives.

The first relates to quantities described to be in the vicinity of any numeral ending with zero (other than zero on its own) up to 100 – 10, 20, 30, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80, 90 and 100 – as well as numerals in the teens, to which the suffix **-ак/ak** is added:

Десетак момака је изашло на улицу. **Desetak momaka je izašlo na ulicu.** *Approximately ten young men stepped out into the street.*

Петнаестак војника је чекало. **Petnaestak vojnika je čekalo.** *Fifteen or so soldiers waited.*

The second type relates to approximate quantities around the single or compound numerals ending in numerals other than zero. This type is formed by adding a hyphen and the next ascending number:

Пет-шест особа се јавило на оглас. **Pet-šest osoba se javilo na oglas.** *Five or six people responded to the advertisement.*

Тридесет две-три жене су певале у хору. **Trideset dve-tri žene su pevale u horu.** *Thirty-two or three women sang in the choir.*

Nouns following the first type of approximates are in the genitive plural, whereas agreement for the second type follows the same pattern given for cardinal numbers.

14.8 Distributives

The division of something into equal parts is expressed through the use of distributive numbers. Distributive numbers are cardinal numbers in front of which the preposition **по/по** is placed, indicating the number of parts of the whole that were distributed or assigned:

Деца су добила по два парчета торте. **Deca su dobila po dva parčeta torte.** *The children got two pieces of cake each.*

Свако је купио по један сладолед. **Svako je kupio po jedan sladoled.** *Everybody bought one ice-cream each.*

The preposition **по/по** does not change the gender and case of the number and noun before which it is put. The number agrees with the noun in gender and follows the cardinal number agreement rules.

14.9 Frequentatives

Frequentatives in Serbian are formed in a similar manner to their English equivalents, ‘two times, three times, four times’, etc. – a cardinal or ordinal number and the word ‘times’ are linked to form one word.

In Serbian the word **пут/put** (times) follows the cardinal number to form one word:

Двапут сам јој рекла.	Dvaput sam joj rekla.	I told her twice (two times).
----------------------------------	----------------------------------	----------------------------------

With an ordinal number, the two are separated and the number is often preceded by the preposition **по/по** (following all ordinal numbers except first):

По трећи пут га зовем.	Po treći put ga zovem.	I'm calling him for the third time.
-----------------------------------	-----------------------------------	--

The same can be expressed with the use of **пута/puta**, although in that formation the number preceding is cardinal and stands on its own:

Два пута сам јој рекла.	Dva puta sam joj rekla.	I told her twice (two times).
Три пута га зовем.	Tri puta ga zovem.	I am calling him three times.

Frequentatives behave as adverbs and do not decline.

14.10 Weights and measures

The metric system is used for weights and measures:

Мере за тежину:	Mere za težinu:	Weights and measures:
један грам	jedan gram	one gram
петсто грама	petsto grama	five hundred grams
један килограм	jedan kilogram	one kilogram
пола кила	pola kila	half a kilo
једно кило	jedno kilo	one kilo
два кила	dva kila	two kilos
једна тона	jedna tona	one ton
Мере за дужину:	Mere za dužinu:	Measures of length and distance:
један милиметар	jedan milimetar	one millimetre
један сантиметар	jedan santimetar	one centimetre

пола метра	pola metra	half a metre
један метар	jedan metar	one metre
два метра	dva metra	two metres
сто метара	sto metara	one hundred metres
један километар	jedan kilometar	one kilometre
два километра	dva kilometra	two kilometres
Мере за течност:	Mere za tečnost:	<i>Measures for liquids:</i>
један децилитар/ један деци	jedan decilitar/ jedan deci	one decilitre
пола литра	pola litra	half a litre
седам десилитра/ седам деци	sedam decilitra/ sedam deci	seven decilitres
један литар	jedan litar	one litre
два литра	dva litra	two litres

14.11 Age

Asking and telling of age is expressed in several ways:

- | | | | |
|---|-----------------------------|-----------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| 1 | Колико година
има Марко? | Koliko godina
ima Marko? | How many years does
Marko have? |
| 2 | Колико је
Марко стар? | Koliko je Marko
star? | How old is Marko? |
| 3 | Колико је
Марку година? | Koliko je Marku
godina? | How many years is (it to)
Marko? |

The following replies correspond to the questions:

- | | | | |
|---|--------------------------------|--------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1 | Марко има
десет година. | Marko ima
deset godina. | Marko has ten years. |
| 2 | Марко је стар
десет година. | Marko je star
deset godina. | Marko is ten years old. |
| 3 | Марку је десет
година. | Marku je deset
godina. | (To) Marko (it) is ten
years. |

In the first two examples, Marko is in the nominative case. In the last example, Marko is in the dative case.

Ја имам двадесет три године.	Ja imam dvadeset tri godine.	I am twenty-three years old.
Она је стара дванаест година.	Ona je stara dvanaest godina.	She is twelve years old.
Њему је три године.	Njemu je tri godine.	To him it is three years.

If the person whose age is being inquired about is a friend or is someone of whom it is known that their birthday has just passed or is about to come, then a common form of the question pertains to the number of years one has completed (filled), i.e. lived:

Колико си година напунио?	Koliko si godina napunio?	How many years have you completed?
Колико година пуниш?	Koliko godina puniš?	How many years are you completing?
Напунио сам 18 година.	Napunio sam 18 godina.	I have completed 18 years.
Пуним 18 година.	Punim 18 godina.	I am completing 18 years.

14.12 Days, months and dates

The following are the days of the week. These are not capitalised. Some days are of the masculine and some of the feminine gender:

понедељак	ponedeljak	Monday (m)
уторак	utorak	Tuesday (m)
среда	sreda	Wednesday (f)
четвртак	četvrtak	Thursday (m)
петак	petak	Friday (m)
субота	subota	Saturday (f)
недеља	nedelja	Sunday (f)

A week is referred to as **недеља/nedelja** or **седмица/sedmica**. When referring to only one week, the expression is:

недељу дана nedelju dana a week (of days)

When referring to more than a week, the number preceding ‘week’ is cardinal:

две недеље **dve nedelje** two weeks

The preposition **y/u** (‘in’ but in this context the English equivalent is ‘on’) followed by the accusative is always used in reply to questions relating to the days of the week – ‘on what day?’:

када ...? **kada ...?** when (on what day) ...?

y понедељак **u ponedeljak** on Monday

y средy **u sredu** on Tuesday

y петак **u petak** on Friday

The following are the months of the year. These are not capitalised:

јанyар **januar** January

фeбpуар **februar** February

март **mart** March

април **april** April

мај **maj** May

јyни **juni** June

јyли **juli** July

авгyст **avgust** August

септембар **septembar** September

октобар **oktobar** October

новембар **novembar** November

децембар **decembar** December

All the months are masculine gender and those with a **-бар/бар** ending have a fleeting **a**, reflected through the cases as **-бра/бра**, **-бpу/бpу**:

октобра **oktobra** October (gen.)

октобpу **oktobru** October (dat./loc.)

The months June (**јyни/juni**) and July (**јyли/juli**) lose their final **-и/i** when endings are added through the cases:

првог јyна/јyла **prvog juna/jula** (on) 1 June/July (gen.)

y јyнy/јyлy **u junu/julu** in June/July (loc.)

As with weeks, when referring to only one month, the expression is:

месец дана **mesec dana** a month (of days)

When referring to more than a month, the number preceding 'month' is cardinal:

два месеца **dva meseca** two months

The preposition **y/u** (in) with the locative case is used in reply to when?:

y янyарy **u januaru** in January

y мартy **u martu** in March

y jyly **u julu** in July

Ordinal numbers, which function as definite adjectives, are used in forming dates (see Section 14.2 Ordinal numbers):

први мај **prvi maj** 1 May

пети октобар **peti oktobar** 5 October

In compound numbers, only the last digit is an ordinal number, while the preceding numbers are cardinal:

двадесет (card.)	dvadeset (card.)	The twenty-first of
први (ordinal nom.)	prvi (ordinal nom.)	May
мај (nom.)	maj (nom.)	

двадесет (card.)	dvadeset (card.)	The twenty-fifth of
пети (ordinal nom.)	peti (ordinal nom.)	October
октобар (nom.)	oktobar (nom.)	

тридесет (card.)	trideset (card.)	The thirty-first of
први (ordinal nom.)	prvi (ordinal nom.)	December
децембар (nom.)	decembar (nom.)	one thousand*
хиљаду* (acc.)	hiljadu* (acc.)	nine hundred and
девет сто	devet sto	ninety
деведесет (nom.)	devedeset (nom.)	ninth year
девете (ord. gen.)	devete (ord. gen.)	
године (gen. sg.)	godine (gen. sg.)	

31. децембар 1999.	31. decembar 1999.	31st December 1999
---------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

тринаести (ord. nom.) јули (nom.) две хиљаде (card.) и друге (ord. gen.) године (gen. sg.)	trinaesti (ord. nom.) juli (nom.) dve hiljade (card.) i druge (ord. gen.) godine (gen. sg.)	The thirteenth of July two thousand and second year
13. јули 2002.	13. juli 2002.	13th July 2002

* One thousand **хиљаду/hiljadu** is in the accusative.

When the date is given in response to the questions:

када ... ?	kada ... ?	when ... ?
којег датума?	kojeg datuma?	on what date?

the genitive case is used:

првог маја	prvog maja	on the first of May
петог октобра	petog oktobra	on the fifth of October
Рођена сам тринаестог (ord. gen.) јула (gen.) хиљаду (acc.) девет стотина (card.) и педесет (card.) четврте (ord. gen.) године (gen. sg.).	Rođena sam trinaestog jula hiljadu devet stotina i pedeset četrte godine.	I was born on the thirteenth of July one thousand nine hundred and fifty four (one thousand nine hundred and fifty fourth year).

No preposition precedes the date in Serbian:

Били смо у Лондону осмог јануар.	Bili smo u Londonu osmog januara.	We were in London on the eighth of January.
Идемо на скијање дванаестог фебруара.	Idemo na skijanje dvanaestog februara.	We're going skiing on the twelfth of February.
Вратили су се двадесет трећег јула.	Vratili su se dvadeset trećeg jula.	They returned on the twenty-third of July.

In the numerical form, dates are followed by a full stop:

**2003. година је брзо
прошла.**

**2003. godina je
brzo prošla.**

The year 2003
went by quickly.

**Преселили смо се
у Београд 1998.
године.**

**Preselili smo se
u Beograd 1998.
godine.**

We moved to
Belgrade in 1998.

14.13 Time

14.13.1 Telling the time

Time is expressed using a cardinal number and any of the following nouns:

час	čas	hour (used in 24-hour clock)
сат	sat	hour/o'clock
и по	i po	half past
пола*	pola*	30 minutes to/of

* Precedes the cardinal number and refers to half of the next hour and not the one just gone.

петнаест до*	petnaest do*	15 minutes to
и петнаест	i petnaest	15 minutes past

* See above.

The words 'hour' and 'minute' after two, three and four get the ending -a: **два сата/dva sata** (two hours/o'clock), **три сата/tri sata** (three hours/o'clock), **четири минута/četiri minuta**, while five and above follow the genitive plural (excluding compound numbers ending in the numbers one, two, three and four:

један сат/минут	jedan sat/minut	one hour/o'clock/ one minute
два сата/минута	dva sata/minuta	two hours/o'clock/ two minutes
три сата/минута	tri sata/minuta	three hours/o'clock/ three minutes
четири сата/ минута	četiri sata/minuta	four hours/o'clock/ four minutes

пет сати/минутā	pet sati/minutā	five hours/o'clock/ five minutes
десет сати/минутā	deset sati/minutā	ten hours/o'clock/ ten minutes

In reply to the question:

Колико је сати?	Koliko je sati?	What is the time?
------------------------	------------------------	-------------------

one could say:

један сат и пет минутā	jedan sat i pet minutā	five minutes past one	1:05
пет минута прошло један	pet minuta prošlo jedan	five minutes past one	1:05
петнаест минутā прошло осам	petnaest minutā prošlo osam	fifteen minutes past eight	8:15
осам и петнаест	osam i petnaest	quarter past eight	8:15
двадесет три часа и осамнаест минутā	dvedeset tri časa i osamnaest minutā	twenty-three hours and eighteen minutes	23:18
осам сати и петнаест минутā	osam sati i petnaest minutā	eight o'clock and fifteen minutes	8:15
двадесет часова и двадесет пет минутā	dvadeset časova i dvadeset pet minutā	twenty hours and twenty-five minutes	20:25

The word сат/sat or час/čas (hour) need not always be included, neither need минута/minuta (minute):

један и пет	jedan i pet	five past one	1:05
осам и четрдесет пет	osam i četrdeset pet	eight forty-five	8:45
петнаест до девет	petnaest do devet	quarter to nine	8:45
два и тридесет	dva i trideset	two thirty	2:30
пола три	pola tri	half past two	2:30

In reply to the question:

у колико сати?	u koliko sati?	at what time?
-----------------------	-----------------------	---------------

one could say:

У један сат и пет минутā	u jedan sat i pet minutā	at five minutes past one
У осам и четрдесет пет	u osam i četrdeset pet	at eight forty-five
У петнаест до девет	u petneast do devet	at a quarter to nine

14.13.2 *Time-related words and expressions*

Some of the following are time-related adverbs, adverbial expressions and adjectives (adverbs and adverbial expressions do not decline, nor do they have number or gender, while adjectives do):

Adverb	јутрос	jutros	this morning
Adjective	јутрашњи	jutrašnji	this morning's
Adverb	данас	danas	today
Adjective	данашњи	današnji	today's
Adverb	вечерас	večeras	this evening
Adjective	вечерашњи	večerašnji	this evening's
Adverb	ноћас	noćas	night just passed/ tonight
Adjective	ноћашњи	noćasnji	night's just passed/ tonight's
Adverb	јутро-јутру	ujutro-ujutru	in the morning
Adjective	јутарњи	jutarnji	morning
Adverb	дању	danju	in the day
Adjective	дневни	dnevni	daily
Adverb	увече	uveče	in the evening
Adjective	вечерњи	večernji	evening
Adverb	прекјуче	prekjuče	day before yesterday
Adjective	прекјучерашњи	prekjučerašnji	day before yesterday's
Adverb	синоћ	sinoć	last night
Adjective	синоћњи	sinoćnji	last night's
Adverb	сүтра	sutra	tomorrow
Adjective	сүтрашњи	sutrašnji	tomorrow's

Adverb	неделџа	nedelja	Sunday/week
Adjective	неделџнц неделџом, понеделџком, etc.	nedeljni nedeljom, ponedeljkom	weekly/sunday's on Sundays, Mondays, etc. (use of the instrumental to indicate a regular, plural occurrence)

In reply to the question:

када ...? kada ...? when ...?

If replying with 'every ...' **сваки/svaki**, 'last ...' **прошли/prošli**, 'next ...' **идући/iduće**, the genitive case with the appropriate gender ending would be used:

сваког/прошлог/идућег сата	svakog/prošlog/idućeg sata	every/last/next hour
сваког/прошлог/идућег јутра	svakog/prošlog/idućeg jutra	every/last/next morning
сваке/прошле/идуће вечери	svake/prošle/iduće večeri	every/last/next evening
сваке/прошле/идуће ноћи	svake/prošle/iduće noći	every/last/next night
сваког/прошлог/идућег понеделџа	svakog/prošlog/idućeg ponedeljka	every/last/next Monday
сваке/прошле/идуће среде	svake/prošle/iduće srede	every/last/next Wednesday
сваког/прошлог/идућег четвртка	svakog/prošlog/idućeg četvrtka	every/last/next Thursday
сваке/прошле/идуће суботе	svake/prošle/iduće subote	every/last/next Saturday
сваке/прошле/идуће недеље	svake/prošle/iduće nedelje	every/last/next Sunday
сваког/прошлог/идућег месеца	svakog/prošlog/idućeg meseca	every/last/next month
сваког/прошлог/идућег јануара	svakog/prošlog/idućeg januara	every/last/next January
сваког/прошлог/идућег априла	svakog/prošlog/idućeg aprila	every/last/next April
сваког/прошлог/идућег двадесет петог у меседу	svakog/prošlog/idućeg dvadeset petog u mesecu	every/last/next twenty-fifth of the month

Quantifiers

Quantifiers can function as nouns, adjectives or adverbs and they refer to quantity ('many, enough, a little, a bunch of', etc.). Most quantifiers are followed by nouns in the genitive case.

15.1 Types of quantifiers

Quantifiers can be used with nouns representing things or beings that can be counted (**човек**/*čovek* – 'man', **сто**/*sto* – 'table', etc.), those that cannot be counted (**киша**/*kiša* – 'rain', **шећер**/*šećer* – 'sugar', **брашно**/*brašno* – 'flour', etc.), as well as collective nouns (**грожђе**/*grožđe* – 'grapes', **камење**/*kamenje* – 'stones', **јагњад**/*jagnjad* – 'lambs', etc.).

15.1.1 Countable quantifiers

The nouns **број**/*broj* (number) and **део**/*deo* (part), when preceded by adjectives denoting number or size, can be used to quantify countable nouns. The nouns following these are in the genitive plural (or genitive singular, if describing a part of something), while the verb is in agreement with the original quantifying noun, i.e. **број**/*broj* – masculine singular – or **део**/*deo* – neuter singular.

велики / <i>veћи</i> / највећи број	veliki / <i>veći</i> / najveći broj	a great/greater/ greatest number of
мали / <i>maњи</i> / најмањи број	mali / <i>manji</i> / najmanji broj	a small/smaller/ smallest number of
добар број	dobar broj	a good, significant number of

велики/већи/највећи део	veliki/veći/najveći deo	a great/greater/greatest part of
мали/мањи/најмањи део	mali/manji/najmanji deo	a small/smaller/smallest part of
добар део	dobar deo	a good, significant part of

The following nouns denote quantity and are followed by countable nouns in the genitive plural. The verb agrees with the original quantifying noun in gender and number.

асортиман	asortiman	an assortment of (m)
букет	buket	a bouquet of (m)
низ	niz	a series of (m)
пар	par	a pair of (m)
група	grupa	a group of (f)
неколицина	nekolicina	(a group of) several (f) (applies to masculine human nouns only. The verb is in the feminine singular.)

Countable quantifiers and the adjectives preceding them decline, while the nouns following them remain in the genitive plural or singular, as the case may be:

Молим вас, покажите ми онај пар ципела.	Moli vas, pokažite mi onaj par cipela.	Show me that pair of shoes please.
Та група момака је била веома весела.	Ta grupa momaka je bila veoma vesela.	That group of youths was quite happy.
Дао је новац неколицини младића.	Dao je novac nekolicini mladića.	He gave the money to (a group of) several youths.

The quantifier **неколико/nekoliko** (several) is followed by genitive plural nouns and collective nouns ending in **-ад/ad**. The verb following it is in the neuter singular.

Its adjectival form, **неколики/nekoliki**, has all three genders and is followed by plural nouns in the same case as the adjective:

Plural:			
	Masculine	Feminine	Neuter
Nom.	неколики nekoliki	неколике nekolike	неколика nekolika
Gen.		неколиких nekolikh	
Dat.		неколиким(а) nekolikim(a)	
Acc.	неколике nekolike	as nom.	as nom.
Voc.		as nom.	
Inst.		as dat.	
Loc.		as dat.	

15.1.2 Uncountable quantifiers

The main quantifiers used with uncountable nouns are the nouns **количина/količina** and **свота/svota**, both translating as ‘amount/quantity’. These are preceded by adjectives. Both are feminine nouns and can be used in the singular and in the plural. The nouns following them are in the genitive singular and the verb will agree with the quantifying noun in gender and number.

велика/већа/највећа количина/свота	velika/veća/najveća količina/svota	a great/greater/ greatest amount of
мала/мања/најмања количина/свота	mala/manja/najmanja količina/svota	a small/smaller/ smallest amount of
значајна количина/свота	značajna količina/svota	a significant amount of

Uncountable quantifiers and the adjectives preceding them decline, while the nouns following them remain in the genitive singular:

Девојка је просула велику количину млека.	Devojka je prosula veliku količinu mleka.	The girl spilt a large quantity of milk.
--	--	--

**У сефу су се
налазиле мале
своте новца.**

**U sefu su se
nalazile male
svote novca.**

There were *small
amounts of money*
in the safe.

The following nouns are used to quantify uncountable nouns. The noun following them is in the genitive singular and the verb agrees with the original quantifying noun in number and gender.

комад	komad	a piece of
парче	parče	a piece, part of
флаша	flaša	a bottle of
чаша	čaša	a glass of
векна	vekna	a loaf of
кашика	kašika	a spoonful of
шоља	šolja	a cup of
кило	kilo	a kilo of
литар	litar	a litre of
метар	metar	a metre of

**Чаша воде је
стајала на столу.** **Čaša vode je
stajala na stolu.** *A glass of water stood
on the table.*

**Дајте јој
парче торте.** **Dajte joj parče
torte.** *Give her a piece of cake.*

15.1.3 Countable and uncountable quantifiers

The following quantifiers can be used with both countable and uncountable nouns and are followed by the genitive plural of countable nouns, but by the genitive singular of uncountables:

МНОГО	mnogo	many, a great many, a lot of (gen. pl.), much, a lot of (gen. sg.)	Followed by noun in genitive. If partitive, noun takes genitive singular, otherwise genitive plural. The verb takes neuter singular. Also has adverbial function.
ВИШЕ	više	more	Comparative of МНОГО/mnogo .
НАЈВИШЕ	najviše	most	Superlative of МНОГО/mnogo .

пуно	puno	a lot of, plenty of	As МНОГО/mного .
мало	malo	a little, some	As МНОГО/mного .
мање	manje	less	Comparative of мало/malo .
најмање	najmanje	least	Superlative of мало/malo .
мноштво	mnoštvo	a multitude of	Neuter singular noun takes neuter singular verb.
део	deo	a part of	Masculine singular noun takes masculine singular verb.
доста	dosta	enough	As МНОГО/mного .
довољно	dovoljno	sufficient	As МНОГО/mного .
нешто	nešto	some	As МНОГО/mного .
већина	većina	a majority of, the greater part of	Feminine singular noun and feminine singular verb.
мањина	manjina	a minority of, a smaller part of	As већина/većina .

The following adjectives are followed by countable nouns and take the case of the noun:

безбројни	bezbroyni	countless
бројни	brojni	numerous
Он пије кафу с много шећера.	On pije kafu s mного šećera.	He drinks coffee with a lot of sugar.
У соби је било много столова.	U sobi je bilo mного stolova.	There were many tables in the room.
Имате ли мало кафе?	Imate li malo kafe?	Do you have some coffee?
Део намештаја је био старомодан.	Deo nameštaja je bio staromodan.	Part of the furniture was old fashioned.
Мноштво деце се скупило на плажи.	Mnoštvo dece se skupilo na plaži.	A multitude of children gathered on the beach.

Већина навијача је имала улазнице. **Većina navijača je imala ulaznice.** *The majority of fans had tickets.*

Безбројне кише су падале. **Bezbrojne kiše su padale.** *Countless rains fell.*

Много/mного has an adjectival form, **многои/mногои** (many, a lot of). As such, it has all three genders and declines as an adjective. It is used in the singular to quantify countable and uncountable nouns, and in the plural to quantify countable and collective nouns.

Declension of **многои/mногои** (many, a lot of)

	Singular			Plural		
	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
Nom.	многои mnogi	много mnogo	многоа mnoga	многои mnogi	многоа mnoga	многое mnoge
Gen.	многог(а) mnogog(a)	m sg.	многое mnoge		многоих mnogih	
Dat.	многом(е/у) mnogom(e/u)	m sg.	многој mnogoj		многоим(а) mnogim(a)	
Acc.	as nom. = inanimate gen. = animate	as nom.	многоу mnogu	многое mnoge	as nom.	as nom.
Voc.	as nom.	as nom.	as nom.	as nom.	as nom.	as nom.
Inst.	многоим mnogim	m sg.	многом mnogom		as dat.	
Loc.	as dat.	as dat.	as dat.		as dat.	

Многа села су уништена. **Mnoga sela su uništena.** *Many villages were destroyed.*

Многои људи воле ту музику. **Mnogi ljudi vole tu muziku.** *Many people like that music.*

Многе жене иду код козметичара. **Mnoge žene idu kod kozmetičara.** *Many women go to a beautician.*

Многои је љовек страдао. **Mnogi je čovek stradao.** *Many a man suffered.*

Determiners

Determiners are words or phrases that come at the beginning of a noun phrase and signal whether the information is new or familiar. They are elements of noun phrases and include articles (a/an, the), quantifiers (a little, a lot), numbers, possessive adjectives (e.g. my, your, their) and demonstrative adjectives and pronouns (this, that, these, those).

16.1 Possessive determiners

Possessive determiners are also referred to as possessive pronouns. Possessive determiners can stand along other types of determiners and are used to tell to whom a body part, item of clothing, or family member or anything else belongs.

Of special importance in Serbian is the possessive determiner **свој/свој** (also referred to as the reflexive possessive pronoun – ‘one’s own’). It is used for all persons, genders and number and declines as the possessive pronoun **мој/мој** (see Section 8.3 Possessive pronouns):

Видела је њену децу. Videla је njenu decu. She saw *her* children.

Видела је своју децу. Videla је svoju decu. She saw her *own* children.

Although **њену децу/njenu decu** (her children) may refer to children belonging to her, it may also mean the children belonging to any previously referred to female. Such ambiguity does not occur with **своју децу/svoju decu** which refers back to the subject, which might be a 1st, 2nd or 3rd person subject, and without which it cannot be used.

The determiner **свој/свој** is also used with the indefinite pronoun **свако/svako**:

Свако је узео Свако је uzeo Everyone took *his/her own*
своје ствари. svoje stvari. things.

Свако гледа своје. *Svako gleda svoje.* Each takes care of his/her own.

Personal pronouns in the dative case can also function as possessive determiners (see Section 7.3.3 Dative case):

Где ти је књига? *Gde ti je knjiga?* Where is your book?

Мајка ми је болесна. *Majka mi je bolesna.* My mother is ill.

16.2 Demonstrative determiners

Demonstrative determiners are also referred to as demonstrative pronouns (see Section 8.4).

Овог месеца сам одлучио да штедим. *Ovog meseca sam odlucio da stedim.* This month I've decided to save.

Сећаш ли се кад смо оне године продавали честитке на улици? *Secas li se kad smo one godine prodavali cestitke na ulici?* Do you remember that year (in the past) when we sold Christmas cards on the street?

Quantifiers can be used together with demonstrative determiners in a sentence:

Мали број ове деце уме да чита. *Mali broj ove dece ume da cita.* A small number of these children knows how to read.

Ова група деце касни? *Ova grupa dece kasni.* This group of children is late.

The demonstrative determiners **овакав/ovakav**, **онакав/onakav**, **такав/takav** are also used to replace the English equivalent of 'this' and 'that', particularly in a qualitative sense:

Допада ми се оваква кућа. *Dopada mi se ovakva kuca.* I like this (kind of) house.

while the demonstrative determiners **оволики/ovoliki**, **онолики/onoliki**, **толики/toliki** are used in a quantitative sense:

Упечали смо оволику рибу. *Upekali smo ovoliku ribu.* We caught a fish this big.

The demonstrative determiner **исти/isti** ('the same') is used in the following manner:

Он увек исто ради.	On uvek isto radi.	He is always doing the same thing.
Ви исто мислите.	Vi isto mislite.	You think the same.

16.3 Indefinite determiners

Indefinite determiners, the equivalent of ‘some, any, anyone, either, both, someone’s, somebody’s, anyone’s, anybody’s’ in English, have gender, number and case and include the following:

неки	neki	some, any
понеки	poneki	a, an occasional one
покоји	pokoji	some
било који	bilо koji	any
ма који	ma koji	any
који год	koji god	whichever
нечији	nečiji	somebody’s, someone’s, anybody’s, anyone’s
ичији	ičiji	anyone’s
било чији	bilо čiji	anyone’s
ма чији	ma čiji	anyone’s
чији год	čiji god	whose ever
некакав	nekakav	some, any
икакав	ikakav	any
било какав	bilо kakav	any
ма какав	ma kakav	any kind
који год	koji god	whose ever
којекакав	kojekakav	any, some sort of
било колики	bilо koliki	however big
ма колики	ma koliki	of any size
колики год	koliki god	however big
један	jedan	a, some
<i>Неки те је човек тражио.</i>	<i>Neki te je čovek tražio.</i>	<i>Some man was looking for you.</i>

Сетићеш се нас једног дана.	Setićeš se nas jednog dana.	You will remember us <i>one</i> day.
Ти си ми лепша од било какве лепотице.	Ti si mi lepša od bilo kakve lepoticе.	You are more beautiful to me than <i>any</i> beauty queen.
Изабери било коју од ове три књиге.	Izaberi bilo koju od ove tri knjige.	Choose <i>any one</i> of these three books.
Нашао сам нечије кључеве.	Našao sam nečije ključеве.	I found <i>someone's</i> keys.

The above can be used with the following meanings as well:

И није неки филм.	I nije neki film.	It's not <i>a</i> good film.
Кад бисте му дали који динар не би морао да позајмљује.	Kad biste mu dali koji dinar ne bi morao da pozajmljuje.	If you gave him <i>a</i> dinar he wouldn't have to borrow.

16.4 Interrogative determiners

In addition to the explanation given under interrogative pronouns (see Section 8.6), **који/koji** (which?) and **какав/kakav** (what kind/sort?) also take on the meaning of 'what?':

Који си намештај одлучила да купиш?	Koji si nameštaj odlučila da kupiš?	<i>What</i> furniture have you decided to buy?
Какав је он идиот!	Kakav je on idiot!	<i>What</i> an idiot he is!

16.5 Negative determiners

The negative determiners decline like the original determiner/pronoun from which the negative was formed by the addition of the prefix **-ни/ni**:

ничији	ničiji	no-one's, nobody's
никакав	nikakav	no (kind)
ниједан	nijedan	neither, no, no-one
Немамо никаквог уља.	Nemamo nikakvog ulja.	We don't have <i>any</i> kind of oil.

**Ниједан се кувар
није јавио на
оглас.**

**Nijedan se
kuvar nije
javio na oglas.**

No chef replied to the
advertisement.

**Не занима ме
ничије мишљење.**

**Ne zanima me
ničije mišljenje.**

Nobody's opinion
interests me.

**Ниједно од ова
два одела ми
се не допада.**

**Nijedno od ova
dva odela mi se
ne dopada.**

I don't like *either* one
of these two suits.

Negative determiners have gender, number and case, and are used with negative verbs.

Particles, conjunctions and exclamations

The following are the most frequently used particles, conjunctions and exclamations:

а	a	and, but	Cannot be followed by enclitic
ако	ako	if	
али	ali	but	Interchangeable with a but not и/i
бар/барем	bar/barem	at least	
баш	baš	exactly, really	Emphatic: Баш си паметан!/ Baš si pamentan! You're really clever!
без сумње	bez sumnje	without doubt	
вероватно	verovatno	probably	
ваљда	valjda	hopefully	
да	da	yes, that	
да ли	da li		Interrogative: Да ли знате колико је сати? Da li znate koliko je sati? Do you know what the time is?
дакако	dakako	indeed	
ево	evo	here (you) are/is	

ето	eto	there (you) are/is	
заиста	zaista	really, truthfully	
зар?	zar?	still, really?	Interrogative and emphatic: Зар је морао да га удари? Zar je morao da ga udari? Did he have to hit him?
зато што	zato što	because	+ noun/verb (complete clause)
зато	zato	that's why	+ noun (usually complete clause)
зашто?	zašto?	why?	
због	zbog	because of	+ genitive
због тога што	zbog toga što	because (of the fact that)	+ noun/verb (complete clause)
и	i	and, too, also	Cannot be followed by enclitic
или	ili	or	
ипак	ipak	anyhow, anyway, still	
јасно је (да)	jasno je (da)	obviously, it's clear that	
једино	jedino	only, except	
јер	jer	since, because, as, really?!	
као и	kao i	as, as well as	Cannot be followed by enclitic
као	kao	as, like (comparison)	Cannot be followed by enclitic
ли	li		Interrogative particle (enclitic): Има ли новца у кући? Ima li novca u kući? Is there money in the house?

With the construction **не би ли/не би ли** also used to indicate intention or hope (often with sarcastic/humorous overtones):

**Иде у лов не би ли нешто уловио.
Ide u lov ne bi li nešto ulovio.**

He's going hunting in the hope of catching something.

међутим	međutim	meanwhile, in the meantime, however	Cannot be followed by an enclitic
можда	možda	perhaps	
не	ne	no	Cannot be followed by an enclitic
нема никаквог спора (да)	nema nikakvog spora (da)	there is no doubt (that)	
нема сумње (да)	nema sumnje (da)	there is no doubt (that)	
несумњиво	nesumnjivo	undoubtedly	
ни	ni	neither, nor, either	Also used to emphasise negation: Није хтео ни да је види! Nije hteo ni da je vidi! He didn't even want to see her! Cannot be followed by an enclitic
нипошто	nipošto	under no circumstances	Followed by negative verb
нити	niti	neither, nor	

17

Particles,
conjunctions and
exclamations

но	no	but, however	Interchangeable with a and али/ali but not и/i .
па	pa	so, and, then	
пак	pak	however	
по	po	each (distributive)	Cannot be followed by an enclitic
разуме се	razume se	obviously	
само	samo	only, except	
свакако	svakako	certainly	
свега	svega	only, in all	
такође	takođe	also	
што	što	that	

Part IV

Sentence elements and structure

Sentences

A sentence generally consists of a subject and a predicate. A subject often tells us what the predicate (everything in the sentence or clause that comes after the subject) is about. The subject is usually a noun or a noun phrase. Noun phrases can consist of one word – a noun or pronoun – or of several words connected to and including the main noun. The predicate contains the verb and everything describing and following it. In Serbian, all the elements in a sentence need to be in agreement with respect to person, gender and number, wherever applicable.

18.1 Elements of a sentence

- 1 A sentence will usually contain at least a subject and a verb or verb phrase. The subject is in the nominative case. The subject and the verb need to be in agreement with respect to gender (with appropriate tense) and number:

Миланка пева.

Milanka peva.

Milanka is singing.

Subject Verb

Миланка је стајала и смејала се.

Milanka je stajala i smejala se.

Milanka was standing and laughing.

Subject Verb phrase

- 2 The verb may further dictate whether a direct or an indirect object will follow. The direct object is in the accusative case, while the indirect object is generally in the dative case:

Миланка пева песму.

Milanka peva pesmu.

Milanka is singing a song.

S V Direct Object

Миланка пева песму сину.

Milanka peva pesmu sinu.

Milanka is singing a song to her son.

S V DO Indirect Object

- 3 A sentence may also include a complement, which tells something about the subject, and usually follows verbs such as 'to be', 'to appear', 'to feel'* , 'to seem', 'to become', 'to look', 'to think', etc. A complement can be:

- (a) A noun phrase:

Миланка је добра певачица.

Milanka je dobra pevačica.

Milanka is a good singer.

S V Noun Phrase

- (b) An adjective or adjective phrase:

Миланка је лепа.

Milanka je lepa.

Milanka is pretty.

S V Adjective

- (c) A prepositional phrase:

Миланка је била под притиском.

Milanka je bila pod pritiskom.

Milanka was under pressure.

S V Prepositional Phrase.

* The verb 'to feel' – **осећати се/osećati se** – is followed by the instrumental:

Миланка се осећала глупом.

Milanka se osećala glupom.

Milanka felt stupid.

- 4 A sentence may also contain adverbials. Adverbials tell something about the verb.

An adverbial can be:

- (a) A noun phrase:

После вечере смо појели јагоде са шлагом.

Posle večere smo pojeli jagode sa šlagom.

After dinner we ate strawberries and cream.

S V Noun Phrase

- (b) An adverb phrase:

Често се свађају.

Često se svađaju.

They argue often.

V Adverb

- (c) A prepositional phrase:

Он ради у својој соби.

On radi u svojoj sobi.

He is working in his room.

S V Prepositional Phrase

The equivalent of the English definite and indefinite articles, ‘the’ and ‘a/an’, does not exist in Serbian and their meaning is conveyed through the use of other words. Generally, the words closer to the beginning of the sentence, after the enclitic word order, are definite in nature, while the later in a sentence they appear, the more indefinite their character.

The number one, **један/један**, when used as a modifier (a word modifying a noun; it can be an adjective, noun, adverb-adjective), gives the meaning of the indefinite article ‘a/an’:

Помогао нам је један војник. **Помогао нам је један војник.** A soldier helped us.

The aspect of the verb can also indicate whether the noun is definite or indefinite:

Она пише писмо. **Она пише писмо.** She is writing *a* letter.
Она је написала писмо. **Она је написала писмо.** She wrote *the* letter.

18.2 Types of clauses

A clause is part of a sentence and it consists of a group of words containing a subject and a verb. There are two types of clauses: a main clause and a subordinate clause. A main clause, when on its own, is a

complete simple sentence. A subordinate clause gives additional information about the main clause. It contains a subject and a verb and is generally linked to the rest of the sentence (possibly another clause) by a conjunction. Main clauses are considered to be independent, while subordinate clauses are dependent. A sentence may contain a main clause and a subordinate clause:

Посетићемо вас ако нас будете позвали.

Posetićemo vas ako nas budete pozvali.

We will visit you if you call us.

Clause 1 conj. Clause 2

The main clause contains the main idea of a sentence and can stand on its own:

Посетићемо вас. Posetićemo vas. We will visit you.

A subordinate clause tells more about the main clause and is attached to it.

Деца су била радосна кад су стигла на плажу.

Deca su bila radnosna kad su stigla na plažu.

The children were joyous when they got to the beach.

Main Clause Subordinate Clause

There are different types of subordinate clauses, including:

- 1 Relative clauses, beginning with 'who' or 'which':

Нашла сам књигу коју сам тражила.

Našla sam knjigu koju sam tražila.

I found the book (which) I was looking for.

Main Clause Subordinate Clause

Ово је жена која чува нашу децу.

Ovo je žena koja čuva našu decu.

This is the woman who takes care of our children.

Main Clause Subordinate Clause

- 2 Interrogative clauses:

Питам вас, кога сте видели?

Pitam vas, koga ste videli?

I ask you, whom did you see?

Main Clause Subordinate Clause

Sentence structure

19.1 Word order

Word order in Serbian is very flexible with the exception of enclitics and the order they must follow (see Chapter 13 Enclitics):

Наша школа се налази у центру града.	Naša škola se nalazi u centru grada.	Our school is located in the centre of town.
У центру града се налази наша школа.	U centru grada se nalazi naša škola.	In the centre of town is located our school.

19.2 Punctuation

Punctuation is generally as in English, with some differences.

1 A full stop is used in the following instances:

- (a) At the end of a sentence;
- (b) After abbreviations:

о.м. – овог месеца	o.m. – ovog meseca	this month
т.г. – текуће године	t.g. – tekuće godine	current year
в.д. – вршилац дужности	v.d. – vršilac dužnosti	acting (chief/head, etc.)
бр. – број	br. – broj	number
стр. – страница	str. – stranica	page

и др. – и друго	i dr. – i drugo	and other
и сл. – и слично	i sl. – i slično	and so on
итд. – и тако даље	itd. – i tako dalje	etc.
тзв. – такозвани/а/о	tzv. – takozvani/a/o	so-called
тј. – то јест	tj. – to jest	that is, i.e.
нпр. – на пример	npr. – na primer	for example, e.g.
ул. – улица	ul. – ulica	street
проф. – професор	prof. – profesor	professor
г. – господин	g. – gospodin	mister, Mr
Бгд. – Београд	Bgd. – Beograd	Belgrade
инж. – инжењер	inž. – inženjer	engineer
мед. – медицински/а/о	med. – medicinski/a/o	medical
срп. – српски	srp. – srpski	Serbian

- (c) Following ordinal numbers;
 (d) Following numbers and Roman numerals when listing by number or letter:

I. Увод **I. Uvod** I. Introduction

а. Именице **a. Imenice** a. Nouns

- (e) Dividing large numbers – where in English a comma is used:

1.000 **1.000** 1,000

100.000 **100.000** 100,000

A full stop is omitted in the following instances:

- (a) Following certain titles:

др **dr** Doctor

мг **mg** Magistrate

гђа **gђa** Mrs, madam

гђица **gђica** Miss

- (b) Following most abbreviations with capital letters:

НАТО НАТО НАТО

УН УН УН

ЕУ ЕУ ЕУ

- (c) Following cardinal numbers

2 A comma is used in the following instances:

- (a) to divide a sentence into parts, to include or exclude something;
- (b) to separate expressions or discourse markers:

А поред тога, касно је. **A pored toga, kasno.** Besides, it's late.

Ми ћемо, без сумње, вама помоћи. **Mi ćemo, bez sumnje, вама pomoći.** We will, without doubt, help you.

- (c) Following appositions to the subject:

Ћђа Влашић, наша комшиница, је вегетеријанка. **Gđa Vlašić, naša komšinica, је vegeterijanka.** Mrs Vlašić, our neighbour, is a vegetarian.

- (d) Preceding subordinate clauses;
- (e) Usually after the conjunctions: **a/a, али/ali**, both meaning 'but';
- (f) Separating parts of a sentence containing verbal adverbs;
- (g) Preceding non-restrictive relative clauses:

Њихова сестра, која ради у болници, је наша пријатељица. **Njihova sestra, која radi u bolnici, је naša prijateljica.** Their sister, who works in a hospital, is our friend.

A comma is omitted when preceding coordinating conjunctions: **и/i** (and), **а/a** (and).

3 Quotation marks:

- (a) Are used in the same way as in English with the difference that the initial set of inverted commas lies on the base line and is not suspended:

„Ти си добар човек”, рекао је Џон. **„Ti si dobar човек”, rekao је Džon.** “You're a good man”, John said.

(b) Are used when referring to names and titles of things:

хотел	hotel	Hotel “Jugoslavija”
„Југославија”	„Jugoslavija”	
часопис	časopis	the magazine <i>Astrologus</i>
„Астрологус”	„Astrologus”	

19.3 Simple sentences

A simple sentence expresses a complete thought, containing a subject and a predicate:

Оља воли Милоша. Olja voli Miloša. Olja loves Miloš.

Simple sentences are incomplete when either is missing. The reflexive pronoun **се/se** is generally used to form an impersonal sentence, where there is no given subject, equivalent to the use of the English ‘one’:

Путује се. Putuje se. One travels.

A simple sentence will have one predicate.

19.4 Complex sentences

Complex sentences are made up of clauses:

Купила сам колач Kupila sam kolač I bought the cake
(main clause)

који волите. koji volite. which you like.
(subord. clause)

A complex sentence can contain two or more simple sentences, or independent clauses, or it can contain two or more simple sentences, or clauses, of which one at least is independent, while the other can be a dependent clause. Two dependent clauses cannot exist together to form a complex sentence.

A complex sentence can have two or more predicates.

Word formation

Words are formed in response to a need to express something. The majority of words in Serbian were generally formed from an original, independent word, which was taken as the root for the new word, and to which prefixes, infixes or suffixes were added. The new word is related in meaning to the original word through its root, and it is possible to trace the origin of most words. Many, however, are taken as the original.

As such, there are three types of words, depending on how they were formed.

In the examples:

киша	kiša	rain – noun
кишан	kišan	rainy – adjective
кишобран	kišobran	umbrella (rain-guard) – noun formed from two words

Киша/kiša (rain) is a noun which can stand on its own. It can be used as the root to form other words.

Кишан/kišan (rainy) is an adjective derived from the original noun, to which an **н/n** suffix has been added.

Кишобран/kišobran (umbrella) is a noun formed from two separate words: **киш/kiš** from **киша/kiša**, and **бран/bran**, derived from the verb **бранити/braniti** (to guard), linked together by the letter **о**.

Similarly:

бранити	braniti	to guard, protect, defend
бранилац	branilac	defender
браник	branik	(car) bumper
бранилачки	branilački	defending (adj.)

with the addition of the suffix **-лац/lac**, or the suffix **-ик/ik**, to the root of the verb **бранити/braniti**, a new word is formed.

These elements used to form new words, be they prefixes, infixes or suffixes, are referred to as being productive because their form is still valid and can be used to this day to make new words. Some words are formed from several elements:

стан	stan	flat
стан-ар	stan-ar	tenant
стан-ар-ина	stan-ar-ina	rent

20.1 Prefixes

Words formed with the following prefixes acquire new meanings:

до/do-	(i)	up to, to, as far as
	(ii)	conveys the idea of successful completion of the action
		донети/doneti (to bring to)
за/za-		дочекати/dočekati (to receive or meet that or whom one had been waiting for)
	(i)	gives special emphasis to the starting of the action
	(ii)	conveys a meaning of 'at the back of, or behind'
		започети/započeti (to start)
		заплакати/zaplakati (to start crying)
у/u-		завући/zavući (to pull, hide behind something)
		in, into
		убацити/ubaciti (to throw, put into)
од/od-		from, to reciprocate or return an action
		одбацити/odbaciti (to reject, cast aside – to throw away)
из/iz-	(i)	from, from out of
	(ii)	conveys an idea of an action being carried out to its end or in fullness
		изаћи/izaći (to come out from)
		изморити/izmoriti (to tire out)

- при/pri-** (i) conveys the idea of adding to something, or the attachment of a smaller body to a larger body
(ii) conveys the idea of bringing an action to a head
придружити/ pridružiti (to join)
присилити/ prisiliti (to force)
- под/ pod-** conveys the meaning of under
подвући/ podvući (to underline)
потписати/ potpisati (to sign – under the text or line)
- на/ na-** (i) conveys idea of bringing the action to an end or to its fulfilment
(ii) conveys a meaning of on, onto
научити/ naučiti (to learn)
набацати/ nabacati (to throw on or onto)
- о/о-, об/ ob-** around
обићи/ obići (to tour, to pay a visit, to go around)
описати/ opisati (to describe, talk around something giving its description)
- с/с-, са/ sa-** (i) conveys a sense of cooperation, togetherness
(ii) conveys a meaning of off
сарађивати/ sarađivati (to cooperate)
скренути/ skrenuti (to turn off the main path, road, direction, etc.)
- уз/ uz-** (i) alongside
(ii) to carry out an action with an upward or 'begin to' meaning
уздржати се/ uzdržati se (to control oneself)
узбудити/ uzbuditi (to excite)
- про/ pro-** (i) through
(ii) to carry out or perform an action thoroughly, in detail
проћи/ proći (to pass through)
проучити/ proučiti (to study)

пре/pre-	across, over	прегледати/pregledati (to examine, look over)
раз/raz-	conveys the idea of an action bringing about the distribution of the subject into different directions, or parts	разгледати/razgledati (to look around, in all directions) разместити/razmestiti (to arrange in different positions) разбити/razbiti (to break into pieces)

20.2 Suffixes

20.2.1 Nouns

Nouns can be formed from verbal roots, adjectival roots or from other nouns or they can be compounded from two words.

1 Nouns formed from verbal roots with the following suffixes indicate:

(a) The person carrying out the action:

-ац/ац	писац	pisac	a writer	писати/pisati – to write
-лац/лац	спасилац	spasilac	a saviour	спасити/spasiti – to save
-ач/аћ	певач	pevac	a singer	певати/pevati – to sing
-ар/ар	чүвар	čuvār	a watchman	чүвати/čuvati – to keep, to guard
-лица/лица	лүталица	lutalica	a wanderer	лүтати/lutati – to wander

-ља/lja **праља** **pralja** a laundress (usually of feminine gender)

прати/prati –
to wash

(b) An event or condition produced by the action:

-ај/aj **догађај** **dogadjaj** an event

догодити се/
dogoditi se –
to happen

-ба/ba **изложба** **izložba** exhibition

изложити/izložiti –
to exhibit

-ва/va **жетва** **žetva** harvest

жети/žeti – to reap

-(п)је/(l)је **славље** **slavlje** celebration

славити/slaviti –
to celebrate

-ња/nja **штедња** **štednja** savings

штедети/štedeti –
to save

2 Nouns formed from adjectival roots with the following suffixes usually indicate:

(a) The person carrying the traits described by the adjective or passive past participle (of masculine gender):

-ац/ac **белац** **belac** a white man

бео/beo (white)

-ак/ak **лудак** **ludak** a mad man

луд/lud (mad)

-ик/ik **ученик** **učenik** a pupil

учен/učen (taught)

-јак/jak **учењак** **učenjak** a learned person

(b) A noun denoting the trait described by the adjective:

-ина/ina	брзина	brzina	speed брз/brz – fast
-је/je	ослобођење	oslobođenje	liberty ослобођен/oslobođen – liberated
-оћа/oća	самоћа	samoća	loneliness сам/sam – alone
-ота/ota	лепота	lepota	beauty леп/lep – pretty
-ост/ost	храброст	hrabrost	courage храбар/hrabar – brave
-ство/stvo	богатство	bogatstvo	wealth богат/bogat – wealthy

3 Nouns formed from other nouns with the following suffixes usually indicate:

(a) A place:

-ана/ana	кафана	kafana	coffee shop/pub
-ара/ara	месара	mesara	the butcher's
-иште/ište	паркиралиште	parkiralište	parking area
-ница/nica	посластичарница	poslastičarnica	sweetshop
-њак/njak	воћњак	voćnjak	orchard

(b) A person involved, usually professionally, with the underlying noun:

-ар/ar	месо	meso	meat
	месар	mesar	a butcher

посластица	poslastica	dessert
посластичар	poslastičar	a sweetshop attendant

- (c) A person originating from the place represented by the noun:

Of masculine gender:

-ац/ас	Ирац	Irac	an Irishman
-анац/анас	Мексиканац	Meksikanac	a Mexican
-анин/анин	Ирачанин	Iračanin	an Iraqi man
-ин/ин	Србин	Srbin	a Serbian man

Of feminine gender:

-ица/ица	Немица	Nemica	a German woman
-иња/иња	Иркиња	Irkinja	an Irish woman
-ка/ка	Ирачанка	Iračanka	an Iraqi woman
-киња/киња	Српкиња	Srpkinja	a Serbian woman

- (d) A young offspring of human or animal species:

-ић/ић	синчић	sinčić	little son
-че/че	слонче	slonče	little elephant, the young of an elephant

- (e) Diminutives, either real or affectionate:

For masculine gender:

-(ч)ић/(ћ)ић	ланчић	lančić	necklace chain
	ланац	lanac	a chain

For feminine gender:

-ица/ица	бакица	bakica	granny
	бака	baka	a grandmother

For neuter gender:

-це/це	језерце	jezerce	a small lake
	језеро	jezero	a lake

(f) Pejoratives for all genders:

-ина/ina	бабетина	babetina	a fat old woman
	баба	baba	an old woman
	баруштина	baruština	a big puddle
	бара	bara	a puddle

4 Nouns (and adjectives) compounded from two words, each of which has its own meaning, are linked by the vowel **o** or **e**:

југозапад	jugozapad	southwest
југ + о + запад	jug + o + zapad	south + o + west
североисток	severoistok	northeast
север + о + исток	sever + o + istok	north + o + east
једнособан	jednosoban	one-bedroom
једн + о + соба + ан	jedn + o + soba + an	one + o + room + adjective forming suffix
многoboжац	mnogobožac	polytheist
многo + о + бог + ац	mnogo + o + bog + ac	many + o + God + (m noun forming suffix = English -ist)

20.2.2 Adjectives

1 Most adjectives are formed with **-к/k** and **-н/n** suffixes (for masculine gender, with an **a** ending for feminine gender, replaced by an **o** for neuter gender – see Chapter 9 Adjectives):

тежак	težak	heavy (m)
тешка	teška	(f)
тешко	teško	(n)
паметан	pametān	clever, smart (m)
паметна	pametna	(f)
паметно	pametno	(n)

2 Adjectives with the following suffixes indicate possession:

-ин/in	мамин	mamin	mother's
-ји/ji	свачији	svačiji	everybody's
-њи/nji	вечерњи	večernji	evening's
-шњи/šnji	јучерашњи	jučerašnji	yesterday's
-ски/ski	британски	britanski	British
-чки/čki	балтички	baltički	Baltic
-шки/ški	чешки	češki	Czech
-ов/ov	братов	bratov	brother's
-ев/ev	очев	očev	father's

3 Adjectives formed with **-ав/av**, **-ат/at** and **-овит/ovit** are characterised by (a lot of) the underlying noun, usually giving an augmentative force to the adjective:

крвав	krvav	bloody, of something having (a lot of) blood on it
брадат	bradat	bearded, having a (prominent) beard
песковит	peskovit	sandy, having (a lot of) sand on it

Bibliography

- Benson, M., *Englesko-Srpskohrvatski Rečnik*, Prosveta, Beograd, 1986.
- Čupić, D., Fekete, E. and Terzić, B., *Slovo o jeziku*, Partenon, Beograd, 2002.
- Dešić, M., *Pravopis srpskog jezika*, P.S. Grmeč – Privredni pregled, Beograd, 1995.
- Dorđević, R., *Engleski i srpskohrvatski jezik*, Naučna Knjiga, Beograd, 1989.
- Drvodelić, M., *Hrvatsko ili srpsko engleski jezik, Rečnik*, Školska knjiga, Zagreb, 1989.
- Krajišnik, V., *Naučimo padeže*, Filološki fakultet, Beograd, 2000.
- Magner, T.F., *Introduction to the Croatian and Serbian Language*, The Pennsylvania State University Press, University Park, PA, 1991.
- Major, R.A., *The History of Serbian Culture*, Porthill Publishers, Edgware, Middlesex, 1995.
- Partridge, M., *Serbo-Croat, Practical Grammar and Reader*, Prosveta, Beograd, 1991.
- Pravopis Srpskohrvatskog jezika*, Matica Srpska, Marica Hrvatska, Novi Sad – Zagreb, 1989.
- Sljivic-Simsic, B., *Serbo-Croatian Just for You*, The Ohio State University, Columbus, OH, 1985.
- Stanojčić, Ž., Popović, L., *Gramatika srpskog jezika*, Zavod za udžbenike i nastavna sredstva, Beograd, 2000.
- Stevanović, M., *Gramatika srpskohrvatskog jezika*, Obod, Cetinje, 1971.

Index

Bold indicates main entry

active participle of past action *see*
adverbs, verbal

active past participle *see* adjectives,
verbal

adjectives 24, 27, 96, 116, 121, 147,
178, 201–3, 224, 226, 230, 232,
247, 258, 260, 264, 270, 276,
280, 282, 283, 286, 287, 300,
307, 311, 312, 314; classification
203–5; comparative 26, 202, 203,
209, 214–16, 226; declension 138,
151, 204, 207, 209, 212; definite
138, 139, 142, 145, 146, 151,
189, 191, 196, 202–4, 205,
207–9, 211; descriptive 202,
204, 214, 216; indefinite 189,
191, 194, 197, 202–4, 205–7,
208; possessive 29, 118, 188,
208, 210–12, 288; superlative
202, 203, 209, 216–17, 226;
verbal 24, 26, 65–7, 82, 84, 85,
93, 217–22, 224

adverbs 96, 129, 143, 216, 223–32,
272, 280, 282; adjectival 226;
pronominal 226–8; substantival
224–5; verbal 229, 305; verbal
past 231–2; verbal present
229–31

age 273–4

alphabet 13; cyrillic 6, 13–16; latin
8, 13, 14, 16

aorist tense 36, 40, 64, 75–81, 83,
85–7, 93, 96; formation and use

76–80, 86; interrogative 80;
negative 80; negative interrogative
81

approximatives 270

biti – *ōumul/bitī* 61–4, 66, 67, 69,
70, 76, 82, 84, 85, 87, 92, 96,
98, 99, 120, 129, 198; present
perfective of 58, 82, 83, 93, 99
više – *vuuel/više* 215–17

cases of nouns 105, 112–51, 152,
153; accusative 28, 90, 113, 115,
133–9, 145, 147, 168, 183, 184,
185, 186, 187, 188, 206, 208,
238, 251, 253, 265, 268, 269,
275, 277, 299; dative 23, 28, 92,
103, 111, 113, 115, 126–32, 149,
163, 174, 181, 183, 184, 185,
204, 208, 235, 238, 247, 251,
253, 273, 289, 299; genitive
23–5, 28, 97, 105, 111, 113, 115,
117–26, 129, 133, 137, 144, 145,
149, 152, 153, 156, 162, 164,
169, 174, 175, 177, 181, 183–6,
235, 236, 251, 253, 264, 266,
268, 269, 271, 277, 281–5, 294;
instrumental 23, 26, 30, 113, 115,
142–6, 155, 169, 174, 181, 204,
224, 239; locative 28, 113, 115,
146–52, 163, 174, 183, 204, 208,
239, 276; nominative 23–5, 28,
105, 111–13, 115–17, 118, 121,
136–42, 152, 153, 155, 168, 175,
183, 188, 189, 204–6, 208, 226,

- 234, 267, 269, 273, 299; vocative 27, 113, 115, 140–2, 154, 163, 181, 188, 234
- change of *л/л* to *о* 23, 24–5, 68, 153, 154, 169
- čije* – *чужа/чije* 117, 124, 130, 138, 150, 152, 188, 195, 196, 198, 200, 210
- clause types 72, 82–5, 99, 189, 195, 240, 242, 243, 246, 250, 252, 253, 301, 305, 306
- conditional 76, 82–6, 93, 96
- conjugation 36–7; type I 36, 37, 39, 41, 43, 59, 88; type II 36, 37, 39, 42–8, 59, 89; type III 36, 37, 39, 48–50, 60, 89
- conjunctions 38, 58, 63, 64, 70, 73–5, 80, 81, 84, 87–9, 93–5, 99, 101, 104, 122, 137, 183, 185, 215, 233, 240–8, 250, 252, 293–6, 305; coordinating 37, 55, 58, 73, 83, 87, 93, 95, 99, 101, 102, 104, 183, 185, 240–3, 305; subordinating 55, 58, 81, 83–5, 87–9, 99, 243–6
- consonants 8, 17–19, 29, 219, 221, 232; assimilations 21–2, 38, 47; change of *л/л* to *о* 23–5, 68, 153, 154, 169; contractions 22, 23; effects of *e/e* and *и/и* on *к/к*, *г/г* and *х/х* 27, 28, 47, 78, 132, 140, 150, 153; fleeting *a* 22, 23, 25, 47, 67, 68, 125, 137, 144, 153, 164, 206, 214, 216, 219, 275; *J* changes 25, 26, 46, 78, 169, 214; soft and hard 20–1, 25, 29, 30, 43, 52–4, 139, 140, 141, 153–5, 158–61, 173, 189, 203–6, 208, 216; voiced and unvoiced 19–21
- dates 274–80
- days 274–80
- decimals 267
- declension 152–3; 1st A 153–61; 2nd E 162–7, 181; 3rd И/И 168–72; adjectives 138, 151, 204, 207, 209, 212; cardinal numbers 255, 261, 262; nouns 105, 152, 208; nouns (irregular) 105, 173–7; ordinal numbers 209, 265; personal pronouns 151, 181–4; pronominal 182; quantifiers 287
- determiners 268, 288–92; demonstrative 289; indefinite 290; interrogative 291; negative 291; possessive 288
- dialects 9–10
- distributives 271
- effects of *e/e* and *и/и* on *к/к*, *г/г* and *х/х* 27, 28, 47, 78, 132, 140, 150, 153
- enclitics 62, 64, 72, 74, 80, 81, 84, 92, 181, 249–54, 293–6, 301; order and importance 62, 64, 67, 70, 90, 94, 95, 184, 185, 250
- exclamations 38, 58, 63, 64, 70, 73–5, 80, 81, 84, 87–9, 93–5, 99, 101, 104, 122, 137, 183, 185, 215, 233, 240–8, 250, 252, 293–6, 305
- expressions of greetings *see* greeting expressions
- fleeting *a* 22, 23, 25, 47, 67, 68, 125, 137, 144, 153, 164, 206, 214, 216, 219, 275
- fractions 267
- frequentatives 271
- future II 36, 81–2, 83, 84, 93, 99; formation and use 81–2
- future tense 36–8, 55, 63, 71–5, 84, 93, 97, 99, 102–4, 218; formation and use 71–3, 82, 83; interrogative 74; negative 73, 98; negative interrogative 75
- greeting expressions 135; manner 142, 143; means 142, 147, 148; place 142, 147, 148; time 135, 142, 147
- hteti* – *хтерн/hteti* 63, 71, 73, 74, 79, 86, 92, 93, 96, 98, 99, 121

- ići* – *ihul'ići* 57, 68, 82, 99, 133
- imati* – *имати/imati* 41, 63, 79, 96, 97, 120
- imperative 29, 87, 88
- infinitive 36, 37, 38, 45–8, 55, 65, 67, 72, 74, 75, 78, 93, 110, 175, 218, 219, 220, 222, 232; classification 35, 37–9, 71, 72, 77, 104, 110; stem 36, 38, 39–40, 47, 58–61, 67, 78, 111
- interrogative formation 63, 70, 74, 80, 87–90, 93–5, 250
- J* changes 25, 26, 46, 78, 169, 214
- kakav* – *какав/kakav* 117, 124, 130, 150, 195, 197, 198, 200, 205, 291
- kći* – *кху/kći* 111, 112, 132, 142, 151, 152, 153, 168–72, 268
- ko* – *ко/ko* 116, 124, 130, 133, 150, 178, 195, 196, 198
- koji* – *коју/koji* 117, 124, 130, 138, 150, 152, 195, 196, 198, 207, 246, 291, 302
- koliki* – *колики/koliki* 117, 124, 130, 150, 195, 197, 198
- mati* – *мати/mati* 111, 112, 132, 137, 141, 151–3, 162–7, 205
- mañje* – *мање/mañje* 215–17
- moći* – *моћу/moći* 104
- modal verbs (*need to, should, ought to*) 37, 86, 95, 101–4, 121
- months 274–8
- morati* – *морати/morati* 38, 41
- multiplies 270
- negative formation 63, 69, 70, 73, 80, 87–90, 93, 95–8, 120, 253, 260, 291
- nemati* – *немати/nemati* 41
- nouns 24, 26, 27, 96, 105, 122, 145, 147, 148, 175, 178, 195, 201, 208, 222, 224, 233, 252, 258, 259, 260, 262, 264, 265, 267, 269, 271, 282–7, 307, 310, 312–15; cases 105, 112–15, 152, 153; declension 105, 173–7; ending in *-a* 111, 112, 132, 137, 141, 151–3, 162–7, 205; ending in consonant or *-o, -oct/ost, -ad/ad* 111, 112, 132, 142, 151, 152, 153, 168–72, 268; gender 24, 25, 105, 111–12; masculine and neuter nouns 111, 137, 153–61, 204; numbers 255, 269–70; types 105–11, 141, 155, 162, 163, 164, 168, 176, 210, 211, 268, 282; *кху/kći* 111, 112, 132, 142, 151, 152, 153, 168–72, 268
- numbers 178, 255–81, 288, 304; 1 (one) 206, 258–60, 266, 268; 2, 3, 4 and the numeral both 119, 177, 206, 260–3; 5, 6, 7 and onwards 118, 119, 177, 263–4; cardinal 255–8, 265, 266, 268, 271, 272, 275, 276, 305; collective 255, 268–70; nouns 255, 269–70; ordinal 209, 255, 265–7, 271, 276, 304
- numerals *see* numbers
- otac* – *отач/otac* 18, 22
- particles 38, 58, 63, 64, 70, 73–5, 80, 81, 84, 87–9, 93–5, 99, 101, 104, 122, 137, 183, 185, 215, 233, 240–8, 250, 252, 293–6, 305
- passive participle *see* adjectives, verbal
- passive past participle *see* adjectives, verbal
- past adjectival participle *see* adjectives, verbal
- past participle *see* adjectives, verbal
- past tense *see* perfect tense
- past verbal adverb *see* adverbs, verbal
- perfect tense 23, 36, 41, 44, 47, 49, 50, 51, 55, 64–71, 75, 84, 85, 92, 96, 97, 100–4, 120, 218, 253; formation and use 47, 64–9; interrogative 70, 94; negative 69, 98; negative interrogative 70

- prefixes 20, 22, 45, 56, 95, 96, 98, 100, 121, 127, 203, 215, 216, 224, 226, 291, 308
 prepositions 23, 32, 123, 124, 126, 130, 133, 134, 142–9, 169, 183, 184, 185, 187, 224, 233, 249, 271, 272, 275–7, 308; accentuation 235, 249; compound 123, 124, 145, 233, 235; simple 118, 123, 124, 134, 142–9, 233, 234; through the cases 236
 present participle *see* adverbs, verbal
 present tense 27, 36, 42, 43, 45–8, 51, 55, 58–64, 71, 74, 75, 84, 93, 95–7, 99–102, 100, 104, 219, 230, 251; formation and use 58–62; interrogative 64, 94; negative 63, 94, 95; negative interrogative 70; personal endings 58–60; stems 35, 36, 39–40, 47, 58–61, 67, 78
 present verbal adverb *see* adverbs, verbal
 pronouns 116, 178, 224, 226, 233, 259, 269, 288; declension 151, 181–4; demonstrative 138, 139, 152, 192–5, 289; indefinite 178, 179, 288; interrogative 94, 116, 117, 124, 138, 139, 152, 197, 247, 291; negative 178–80; personal 112, 129, 180–6, 249, 250, 251, 253, 289; possessive 118, 138, 138, 152, 188–92, 189, 190, 191, 288; reflexive 90, 129, 181, 186–8, 251, 288, 306; relative 116, 117, 124, 130, 133, 138, 145, 150, 152, 195–8; stressed 183; universal 199–200; unstressed 184, 185
 pronunciation 9, 17, 29, 31, 219
 punctuation 230, 303
 quantifiers 282–7; countable 119, 120, 282–4, 285; types 282; uncountable 119, 120, 284–5, 285
 sentence 72, 299–302; complex 306; elements 112, 116, 181, 299; simple 306; structure 249, 250, 252, 253, 288, 303–6; types of clauses 72, 82–5, 99, 189, 195, 240, 242, 243, 246, 250, 252, 253, 301, 305, 306; word order 303
šta – *шта/шта* 116, 124, 130, 133, 150, 178, 195, 196, 198, 246, 302
 stress 29, 31; sentence 32; shift 32; words and tone 31, 235
 suffixes 20, 22, 25, 26, 30, 38, 51–3, 105–11, 202, 203, 206, 210, 214, 229, 265, 268–70, 307, 308, 310–15
svako – *свако/свако* 199–200, 288
sve – *све/све* 199–200
svi – *сви/сви* 199–200
svoj – *свој/свој* 189–91, 288
 time 278–81; expressions 280; telling 278
trebati – *требати/треба ти* 38, 41, 86, 87, 102–3, 121
 verbs 35–7, 121, 126–9, 135, 136, 147, 148, 193, 198, 205, 224, 229, 230, 232, 258, 262, 264, 265, 269, 283, 292, 299, 300, 307; auxiliary 36, 64, 66, 67, 71, 72, 74, 82–5, 92, 93, 97, 103, 129, 250, 251, 253; conjugation 37; durative 51; gender 36–7; imperfective 35, 36, 38, 51–8, 93, 218, 230, 231; impersonal 17, 91–2, 128, 129; infinitive 36, 37, 45–8, 55, 65, 67, 72, 74, 75, 78, 93, 110, 175, 218, 219, 220, 222, 232; intransitive 35, 50, 51, 90, 122, 218; iterative 51; motion (of) 127, 133, 134, 147; perfective 35, 36, 38, 55–8, 93, 218; reflexive 90, 91, 122, 128, 251; transitive 35, 50, 51, 90, 122, 133, 218, 220; types of and aspects 50, 58
voleti – *воле́ти/воле́ти* 86
 vowels 9, 10, 18, 29, 31, 32, 232

weights and measures 272–3
words: formation 141, 307; order
303; prefixes 20, 22, 45, 56, 95,
96, 98, 100, 121, 127, 203, 215,
216, 224, 226, 291, 308; suffixes
20, 22, 25, 26, 30, 38, 51–3,

105–11, 202, 203, 206, 210,
214, 229, 265, 268–70, 307, 308,
310–14

žao – жao/žao 122

zar – zap/zar 64, 70, 75, 81, 87, 94, 95

eBooks

eBooks – at www.eBookstore.tandf.co.uk

A library at your fingertips!

eBooks are electronic versions of printed books. You can store them on your PC/laptop or browse them online.

They have advantages for anyone needing rapid access to a wide variety of published, copyright information.

eBooks can help your research by enabling you to bookmark chapters, annotate text and use instant searches to find specific words or phrases. Several eBook files would fit on even a small laptop or PDA.

NEW: Save money by eSubscribing: cheap, online access to any eBook for as long as you need it.

Annual subscription packages

We now offer special low-cost bulk subscriptions to packages of eBooks in certain subject areas. These are available to libraries or to individuals.

For more information please contact
webmaster.ebooks@tandf.co.uk

We're continually developing the eBook concept, so keep up to date by visiting the website.

www.eBookstore.tandf.co.uk